INDIAN CAMPAIGNS

1835-1842

Material and Sources
of
Chapter VI, Volume Two
(Part One)

History of the United States Marine Corps

By

Major Edwin North McClellan, U.S. Marines
Officer-in-Charge,
Historical Section.

(Notes and complete index will be found in Part Two)

First Edition
JANUARY 5, 1932

FORENOTE

This compilation is not the final manuscript of this Chapter but represents only material and sources upon which it will be based. If details concerning the participation of the Navy and Army in any operation or incident described herein do not appear, such omission occurs only because it is impracticable in a history of this character to set forth more than the work of the Marines themselves. To do more than this would extend the history beyond a practical scope and size. In many of the operations described, the Navy or the Army, or both, have been present in greater strength than the Marines, and full credit is here given for their splendid achievements.

As a matter of convenience this chapter is divided into two parts.

The following form of citation is suggested if it is desired to cite, either in published works, or manuscript, any information contained herein:-

(McClellan, Hist., U.S.M.C., 1st ed., II,
Ch. VI, p--)

FOREWORD

CHAPTER VI

CAMPAIGNS AGAINST THE CREEK, SEMINOLE AND CHEROKEE INDIANS, 1835-1842

At various times during the years 1835-1842 the American Marines participated in operations against the Seminoles, the Creeks, and the Cherokees. It was during this period that the Marines were detached for service with the Army for the first time under the provisions of the Act of 1834, by order of President Andrew Jackson. In his status of an Army officer, Colonel Commandant Archibald Henderson commanded one brigade (composed of Marines, Regular Army Infantry and Artillery and friendly Creeks) of the two that formed Major General Thomas S. Jesup's Army of the South. Marine Guards from Naval vessels of war cooperated with the Army and Navy Bluejackets ashore and some from the ships were ashore under naval command as land troops and in boats and canoes. Several Marine Officers performed important duty under direction of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs conducting the emigration of the Indians to their new homes in the Western Country.

A Marine Barracks was maintained near Pensacola during these years. It was called the "Marine Barracks, Navy Yard, near Pensacola," or at the "Barrancas, near the Navy Yard, Pensacola."[1]

A treaty was signed, on May 9, 1832, at Payne's Landing by James Gadsden, for the United States, and by the Seminole Chiefs. The latter consented, upon certain conditions, to a removal to lands west of the Mississippi. Two years elapsed before the treaty was ratified, and the delay had an unfavorable effect. A large number of the Chiefs refused to go.[2] On October 29, 1835 Secretary of the Navy Mahlon Dickerson directed Commodore Alexander J. Dallas, Commanding the West India Squadron, to "order one of the vessels of your squadron" to cruise "along the coast from Charlotte Harbor to Tampa Bay during such time as arrangements are making for collecting and embarking the Seminole Indians about to be removed." And to direct "her Commander to communicate with Brigadier General D. L. Clinch, Commanding the U. S. Troops in Florida, who in conjunction with General Thompson, has charge of the removal of those

Indians, and to co-operate with Genl. Clinch in such manner as he may request in effecting their embarkation."[3]

The year 1835 was spent in a series of fruitless negotiations, during which occasional outrages, committed by both whites and Indians, increased the ill-feeling. At the end of the year the Seminoles were divided into two hostile groups. The group adhering to the treaty took refuge near Fort Brooke on Tampa Bay. The others, influenced chiefly by the half-breed Osceola or Powell, resorted to arms.[4]

These hostile Indians, about 450 in number, assembled in the almost inaccessible swamps of the Withlacoochee. These swamps were situated between Fort King near the Ocklawaha, and Fort Brooke on Tampa Bay.[5]

On November 30, 1835 there was a total of six officers and 510 men of the regular Army on duty in Florida. About 250 were stationed at Fort King under Brevet Brigadier General Clinch, one company was at St. Augustine, three at Fort Brooke, and one at Key West.[6]

General Clinch, determined to attack the Indians, sent to Fort Brooke for a detachment to join him at Fort King. Major Dade left Fort Brooke with about 110 men on December 24, 1835. Four days later the Indians attacked this column and only three men escaped.[7]

W. A. Whitehead, the Collector at Key West wrote

Commodore Alexander J. Dallas, who was at Havana on the Constellation about this massacre, calling for protection. "Most painful intelligence has been received today, from the Mainland, of the massacre of two companies of U. S. Troops, with all their officers, while marching from Tampa Bay to Fort King. Intelligence has also been received that the Indians in the vicinity of Cape Florida have likewise massacred a family on the coast, and that the inhabitants of all the settlements in that vicinity are moving down toward Key West. "As we are in a very unprotected state, in consequence of the removal to Tampa Bay, of the Troops and ammunition of the Government, public meetings have been called to devise measures for the protection of ourselves and the other inhabitants of the Islands, and among others adopted, it had been proposed to apply to whatever vessels of war there may be in Havana, for the security their presence in this vicinity will afford. The Committee appointed will, I presume, address you immediately on the subject and you will allow me to express my own wishes that you will comply with their request so far as your orders may permit, as I am satisfied there is a necessity for some steps of the kind."[8]

Commodore Dallas sailed from Havana with the Constellation and St. Louis for Key West in January.[9] The Marine officer of the Constellation was First Lieutenant Nathaniel S. Waldron, while Sergeant John Montgomery was in charge of

the St. Louis' Marines.[10]

The Indians raided the settlements south of St. Augustine. General Clinch, with about 200 regulars and about 400 volunteers under Governor Call crossed the Withacoochee on December 31. They repulsed an attack by the Indians but with a loss to the Regulars of 57 killed or wounded.[11]

At this time the territory of the United States was divided into two military departments, the Eastern under General Winfield Scott, and the Western under General Gaines. The latter, in Louisiana, hearing of Dade's massacre, without waiting for instructions from Washington, sailed for Tampa with a force and landed at Fort Brooke.[12]

Major General Winfield Scott, in January of 1836, was ordered to command the forces in Florida. The militia of South Carolina, Georgia and Alabama were called into active service.[13]

A detachment of Officers, Bluejackets and six Marines[14] left the Vandalia "on the requisition of the Governor of Florida, to act against the Indians of East Florida". These Marines reported back aboard ship on February 19.[15]

"I find the alarm great, at this place, for myself

I apprehend no immediate danger to it, but fear greatly the situation in which the forces at Fort Brooke are placed," reported Dallas on January 15, from Key West, "I have upon reflection determined to remain here for the present, and send to the relief of Fort Brooke all the Marines I can spare from the Squadron and also to send a detachment of Seamen to look after the Light House on Cape Florida. To effect this, I shall be compelled to charter two small vessels".[16]

"The Schooner Grampus should she be found at Pensacola will be ordered to proceed immediately to Tampa Bay," continued the Commodore. "None other of the vessels of the Squadron can approach Fort Brooke nearer than from twenty to twenty-five miles, certainly not nearer than fifteen; however should the Grampus not be at Pensacola the first of the Sloops of War that shall reach this after giving me the provisions which she will have on board for me shall be ordered there, with directions to cooperate in any way possible with the land forces".[16]

On January 17 Commodore Dallas, still at Key West, wrote that "the Marines etc., destined for the assistance of Fort Brooke have already been transferred to a Merchant Brig, to sail within the present hour for Tampa Bay. An

Officer and a party of Seamen will be sent to reinstate the light on Cape Florida so soon as I can obtain a vessel to transport them."[17]

Commodore Dallas on January 27, 1836, at Key West, reported to Secretary Dickerson as follows:

"Lieutenant Bache, who had been despatched with a party of seamen for the purpose of reinstating the Cape Florida light, which had been abandoned by the former keeper, having effected that object, returned last evening and I have the honor to enclose a copy of his report.

" Lieutenant Waldron, left this place on the 18th inst. with a detachment of 57 Marines, Assist. Surgeon Lawrason, Passed Midshipmen Bowie, Midshipmen Beverley and Ford and 7 seamen, for the purpose of affording assistance to our troops at Fort Brooke, Tampa Bay. He has not yet returned, nor have I heard from him since his departure. Unless the services of the said detachment should be required longer, I have reason to expect it here in the course of a week.

"The last intelligence received from Tampa was of the 16th Inst. The Indians were then said to be in considerable force in the immediate vicinity of the Fort.

"No danger is to be apprehended from Indians, for the present, at Key West, but the residents on Indian Key about

65 miles to the Eastward, entertain great fear of an attack, which if successful would doubtless be the precursed of one on this place.

"Mr. Trist, our Consul at Havana, who stopped here, a few hours on his way to that post informed me that a requisition, had been made by the Governor of Florida on the Commander of the Vandalia for 80 men, that they had been furnished, and had left Pensacola for St. Marks. Consequently I cannot expect the Vandalia to join me here.

"I shall leave this post for Pensacola as soon as possible, after the St. Louis shall arrive with provisions for this ship."[18]

First Lieutenant Nathaniel S. Waldron, of the Marines, wrote the following letter from Fort Brooke, Tampa Bay, on January 30, 1836, to Colonel Henderson:

"I left the Frigate Constellation on the 17th inst. with fifty-six Marines under my charge part of the Guard of the St. Louis and that Ship arrived here in a transport chartered for the purpose on the 22nd inst. My presence with the detachment was very gratifying and unexpected and very much wanted as an attack was expected at this point at the very time of my arrival of 400 Indians and negroes.

"The length of time which we shall be wanted is quite

uncertain by information from the northern frontier that thay have had several skirmishes at that point. I trust however they will give the forces concentrated here a chance to put down the troubles in this quarter, which have been spread in the prints. The account of Col. Dade's loss with his command is correct as stated in the Key West papers.

"We are all enclosed within a pickett about 275 officers and soldiers. Col. Twiggs is soon expected here with a strong force for the field.

"The friendly Indians about 100 in number have succeeded in taking three of the hostile Indians one of them had on a soldiers shirt bloody and a bullet hole through it which is a proof of his having been in action.

"The climate here is rather cold and healthy. The Vandalia arrived yesterday from Pensacola. Lieutenant Andrew Ross is on board of her with eight Marines the remainder of his Guard were left at St. Marks. The steamer they took passage in, with some seamen, gave out at St. Marks. A Revenue Cutter will go for them tomorrow.

"I may not be able to make a return of my Command previous to my returning to the Frigate.

"Lieutenant Ross has received his orders to report at Pensacola."[19]

The Log of the Constellation at Key West, for January 18, states that "Lieutenant Waldron went on board the brig Seaflower, of New York, and bound to Tampa Bay, with a detachment of 57 Marines," and that "the Seaflower sailed for Tampa Bay with a detachment of 57 Marines, under the command of Lieutenant Waldron".[20]

It was noted in the Log of the Constellation at Key West for February 5, that "the brig Seaflower arrived" at Key West "two days from Tampa Bay," having "left Lieutenant Waldron and the Marines at Tampa Bay."[21]

Captain F.S.Belton, U.S. Army, at Fort Brooke, Tampa Bay, on February 1, wrote to Commodore Dallas as follows:

"Pursuant to your instructions Lieutenant Waldron, with his very effective detachment, joined this Garrison on the 22nd ult., and has been considered so important a part of the defence, as to make it necessary for them to remain if it should meet your concurrence until the reinforcement from New Orleans reach this place, which if I am rightly informed, may be about the tenth instant."

"On the part of my Comrades, of this Garrison, allow me to present to you, my deep felt acknowledgments for the patriotic as well as kind feelings, which conceived the possibility and so speedily and efficiently threw into

our little work a force so ready and competent to gallant achievement. A prolonged investment of this work created by daily and nightly labor, in the face of the most unflinching and martial barbarians, our Nation had ever struggled with, without retreat, or negotiation in reserve, had tested our constancy, and daily and nightly, for weeks, every moment was expected to avenge our massacred brethern. Under such circumstances, or emotion is to thank you in a tone and manner worthy of your efforts, and our responsibility to preserve this post at all hazards".[22]

Commodore Dallas received the following orders, dated January 30, from Secretary Dickerson:

"General Scott has been appointed to the command of the United States forces against the Hostile Indians in Florida," and "I have to request that you will co-operate (with the force under your command, or a sufficient portion of it) with General Scott in the subjugation and removal of those hostile Indians in such way as you may think most conducive to the public interest."[23]

Captain William C. Bolton, Commandant of the Pensacola Navy Yard, wrote Secretary Dickerson on February 1, "foreign war is so much talked of and Indian War existing, that I think everything ought to be looked to " here.[24]

Secretary Dickerson, on February 2, informed Commodore Dallas that:

"Captain Bolton Commandant of the Navy Yard Pensacola has apprised the Department of his having ordered the Vandalia (in your absence) from the Station to Tampa Bay in consequence of communications from the Governor of Florida and the Commdr. of Ft. Brooke on Tampa Bay. Under the urgent necessity of the case for prompt action the orders given by Captain Bolton to a part of your Squadron to furnish aid and protection to our settlements and posts in Florida, have been entirely approved."[25]

Commodore Dallas, on February 5 reported to Washington, in part, as follows:

"I am most happy to say that the six Officers and Seamen sent in charge of the vessel taking the Marines to the relief of the Military at Fort Brooke, Tampa Bay, have returned all well, having left the detachment of Marines from this Ship and the St. Louis there."

"There being no immediate danger to be apprehended for the safety of this or the adjoining Keys I shall leave here tomorrow morning accompanied by the St. Louis, for Pensacola."

"The Vandalia is now at Tampa Bay with orders to cooperate with and assist as far as possible the movements and objects of the troops in that vicinity."[26]

On the 8th February 1836, Commodore Dallas was informed by the Department that Master Commandant Mervine P. Mix had been ordered to proceed with the Concord, as soon as ready for sea to the West India Station, first to Key West. "On his way out and particularly at Key West and Tampa Bay he is instructed to render all lawful aid in his power to our citizens and their commerce and property and if it should be necessary or expedient to co-operate with the Military forces in defending the inhabitants of Florida from the savage attacks of the Seminole Indians."[27]

Commodore Dallas, on board the Constellation at Key West, wrote Secretary Dickerson on February 7, 1836, that he could see no possible way for the United States to avoid a War with France. He brought this subject up because he believed that in case of such a war Key West would be one of the most exposed stations "and Pensacola in all probability the first point of attack." The Commodore rated Pensacola very high as a naval base and stated that "should it be permitted to fall in the hands of the French," they could "by dismantling one of their line-of-battle ships," affectually "with a large naval force command all the Gulf of Mexico." Therefore, Commodore Dallas earnestly urged that Pensacola be properly defended.[28]

Major-General Edmund Pendleton Gaines' force from New Orleans arrived at Tampa Bay early in February. Master Commandant Thomas T. Webb commanding the Vandalia at Tampa Bay, on February 10, 1836 congratulated Colonel David E. Twiggs on his safe arrival with the troops at Fort Brooke.[29]

At Fort Brooke, on February 10, 1836, General Gaines wrote to Master Commandant Webb, commanding the Vandalia, that his force amounted to "nearly one thousand men: viz: - near 700 Louisiana Volunteers and more than 300 Regular Troops. This force is intended to co-operate with the troops now assembling on the northeast border of East Florida. I shall take the field as soon as the troubles of our Sea Voyage are over and our horses disembark, say in a day or two."[30]

The following day, General Gaines requested Master Commandant Webb "during our absence to place the citizens with the friendly Indians, together with our military stores, on board the Transports now in this Bay. I have to request the favor of you to afford them the protection of the U.S. Ship Vandalia, under your command, and the aid of her boats and crews to assist our awkward landsmen in removing the stores from this place to the Transports, at as early an hour tomorrow as may suit your convenience."[31]

Master Commandant Webb, on February 13, reported to Commodore Dallas that Major General Gaines had arrived from New Orleans at Fort Brooke some days prior with a large reinforcement for that post; that General Gaines had informed him of his intentions of taking the field without delay, of abandoning Fort Brooke, and placing military stores, citizens and friendly Indians on board the transports under the guns of the Vandalia for protection during his absence.[32]

"The Commanding General has not yet informed me," reported Webb "in what way he intends disposing of the Marine Guard in charge of Lieutenant Waldron. So soon as he does, I will act in conformity with your instructions. I am hourly expecting the Revenue Cutter Dallas, from St. Marks with Mr. Rowan, who I sent to that place for the remainder of my officers and men, detached in January last on a requisition of the Governor of Florida."[32]

In a postscript in the same letter, written at 4 p.m., Webb wrote that "since the above was written, my boats have returned from Fort Brooke with the intelligence that General Gaines took up the line of march this morning and had altered his plan of abandoning the Fort and has left Major Sands with 218 men, including the Marine Guard, to maintain the post."[32]

General Gaines marched to Fort King arriving there on February 22 nearly destitute of rations and forage. Having replenished his supplies at Fort Doane, called Fort Drane in some books, he resumed his march toward the Withlacoochee, on the banks of which river he was attacked on the 27th and besieged until March 6, when reinforcements under General Clinch arrived. As soon as the siege was raised, General Gaines turned the command over to General Clinch, and returned to his department. The loss during the siege was 51 killed and wounded. The exhaustion of the supplies at Fort Doane necessarily compelled General Scott to postpone his campaign.[33]

In writing to General Clinch from Picolata, on February 26, General Scott stated that he had "heard with equal astonishment and regret that Major-General Gaines, without reference to my arrangements, perhaps in ignorance, possibly in defiance of them, should have made a premature movement from Tampa Bay, and having arrived within 20 miles of Fort Doane, should have called for nearly three-fourths of the subsistence in deposit at that place, on which I had relied for the movement of the right wing, in concert with the other parts of the Army."[34]

Commodore Dallas left Key West aboard the Constellation, accompanied by the St. Louis, on February 9, 1836 and ar-

rived at Pensacola on February 13, 1836. Here he found the Warren that had arrived earlier on the same day from Galveston and a cruise in the Gulf.[35]

The Dexter arrived at Tampa Bay on February 19 "with the balance of my crew" wrote Master Commandant Webb to Commodore Dallas who was at Pensacola. "He brought me a letter from the Governor of Florida in which he informs me, that a re-inforcement of 250 men would embark in a day or two at St. Marks for the post at Fort Brooke. They are hourly expected and when they arrive, I do not think that presence of this ship here or the services of the Marine Guard under Lieutenant Waldron will be any longer required, as the force in Camp will exceed 300 men, a number deemed sufficient to defend it against any body the Indians can send."[36]

An expedition of three boats and forty-two men of the Vandalia, under Lieutenant L.M. Powell, sailed from Tampa Bay on March 17, direct for the Manatee River which was ascended to the head of boat navigation. From here, on the 19th, the expedition proceeded to the Anclote Keys which were reached on the 21st. Three days later it sailed for the Mullet Keys, arriving there on the 27th. The expedition arrived back at Tampa Bay on the 28th without having had contact with the Indians.[37]

Colonel William Lindsay, U.S. Army left Fort Brooke on March 22, "taking with him Lieutenant Waldron and the Marine Guard under his charge, with the view of forming a junction with Generals Scott, Clinch and Eustis on the Withlacoochee."[38] Lieutenant Waldron, on April 13, reported to Dallas "that he returned with our Marines to Fort Brooke" April 4, "from the expedition under Colonel Lindsay. They had suffered much fatigue and exposure and had several skirmishes with the Indians with but little loss on either side, none on the part of the Marines. They appear to have been active and useful and to have conducted themselves with much propriety".[39]

On April 2, Webb at Tampa Bay, reported that a friendly Indian Chief, Black Dirt, states General Gaines' "troops had been engaged for seven days and that the Indians had sent a Flag of Truce to have a conference on the subject of Peace, at that moment General Clinch arrives with a large force and not knowing of the Truce, charged the Indians when they fled to the woods."[40]

Lieutenant Powell, of the Vandalia, with two boats and about forty officers and men, including three Marines, on March 31 proceeded from Tampa Bay to Charlotte Harbor to relieve the whites who had been attacked by Indians under Chief Wy-ho-kee. On the 12th General Smith handed Powell

instructions from Webb to cooperate in operations with Army. The Naval personnel was incorporated with the Army and made the campaign up the Myacca River. They arrived back at Tampa Bay on April 27.[41] First Lieutenant Andrew Ross of the Marines "accompanied the expedition as a volunteer and was placed in command of one of the columns," reported Colonel Persefor F. Smith who commanded the Army troops. "I owe much to his zeal and exertions, and am sure his well known gallantry would have displayed itself if any had offered," wrote Colonel Smith.[42]

The Concord and Revenue Cutter Washington sailed on April 15 from Pensacola Bay for Tampa Bay.[43]

Commander Mervine P. Mix, of the Concord at Tampa Bay, on April 30, reported to Dallas that "our Marines are still detained at Fort Brooke, at the request of the Commanding General."[44]

The Vandalia left Tampa Bay on April 30, for the Rancho, for the purpose of watering. Commander Mix of the Concord "proceeded in the U. S. Revenue Cutter to the Head Quarters of the Commanding General, to tender to him the cooperation of the force under my command, as directed by" Commodore Dallas' order of April 10. On April 30 Webb reported to Dallas that "the Commanding General has requested that the Concord may remain here

and for the same reasons the Marines also under Lieutenant Waldron. I think however that they will not be long detained as I do not believe the Stockade tenable against the immense force which the enemy will undoubtedly bring against it."[45]

The Vandalia arrived off Pensacola on May 5 and the Grampus on May 13.[46]

The Concord (Commander Mix) and Revenue Cutter Washington arrived at Pensacola Bay on April 8.[47]

On May 18, 1836 Governor Schley of Georgia wrote to General Scott that the Creeks were in open war. "They have crossed to the Georgia side of the Chattahoochee and burnt Roanoke, and an attack on Columbus is daily expected."[48]

"The Creek Indians are in arms and have committed several murders and burnings," and Tallahassee is threatened," reported Dallas on May 20.[49]

General Scott was informed that Brevet Brigadier General John R. Fenwick, (a former Marine Officer)[50] had been ordered to the Creek Country with six companies of artillery.[51]

Brevet Major-General Thomas S. Jesup, on May 19, was assigned to command the troops in the war against the Creeks. Generals Scott and Jesup conferred at Augusta and arrived together at Columbus on May 30. The militia had no arms.[52]

Commodore Dallas, received the following important in-

structions, dated May 25, from Secretary Dickerson:

"It is the wish of the President of the United States that you detach as large a portion of the force under your command as the important duties already committed to your care will permit, for the purpose of aiding in the operations against the Seminole and Creek Indians.

"I have therefore to request that you will cause three steam boats, which will be sent to Pensacola for the purpose, to be manned with Seamen and Marines, with proper Officers, with as little delay as may be, to ply up and down the Chattahoochee River, for the purpose of transporting the necessary supplies, of keeping open the communication, and operating against the Indians. It is believed this may be done with safety to the interest already committed to your care.

"Should Major-General Jesup, who has command of the movements against the Creek Indians, procure one or two additional boats upon the Chattahoochee to be employed in the same manner, I have to request that you will cause to be manned with seamen and Marines, if the strength of your force will permit, for such service, in aid of the movements of General Jesup, as you shall deem most expedient.

"You will communicate, and direct the Officers you may detach upon this service to communicate, with Major General

Jesup, the Governor of Florida and General Clinch, upon all subjects immediately connected with the duties to be performed by your detachment.

"It will be necessary that the Steam Boats on this service should be barricaded and mounted with as many pieces of artillery, as you shall deem expedient.

"That you may the better understand the kind of aid wanted and expected from the force under your command and which it is hoped may be realized, I enclose to you a copy of a letter of the Secretary of War to this Department of the 24th instant.

"In a few days the Sloop of War Boston, now at the Navy Yard Charlestown, Mass., will sail for Pensacola and another sloop will be ordered there in a short time.

"I think the present crisis affords your Squadron the opportunity of rendering important services to the Country, of which I am very confident you will avail yourself."[53]

On the 21st May 1836, Colonel Commandant Archibald Henderson, having tendered the services of the Marines at the shore stations for duty with the Army in the field, the President of the United States by General Order No. 33 from the War Department dated 21 May, 1836[54] directed all the disposable force on shore (except a Sergeants Guard at each of the posts) under Command of the Commandant of the Corps to report in person to Secretary of War Lewis

Cass and then to proceed to Fort Mitchell Alabama and report to the Commanding General for active duty in the field.[55]

Colonel Henderson obeyed these orders and reported to the War Department on May 24, 1836. The Adjutant General of the Army informed Colonel Henderson in a letter on May 25 that "it is not deemed necessary to issue further instructions for your guidance, from this office, since as a matter of course, it is expected, that the Corps, will, under your directions, be equipped and well supplied for active field service."[56]

The Regular Army, although augmented by the militia, volunteers and friendly Indians, welcomed the addition of a two battalion-regiment of Marines. This was nearly half of the entire Corps.[57]

So from May 24, 1836 two battalions of Marines, that were formed into a Regiment, formed part of the Army as provided for by the Act of June 30, 1834.

Orders were issued to the Marines at the various posts to proceed to rendezvous points. On May 21, Captain Parke G. Howle, the Adjutant and Inspector, ordered Brevet Lieutenant Colonel Samuel Miller commanding the Marines at Philadelphia, to "proceed to Fortress Monroe, with the whole Guard under your command with the exception of one Sergeant, one Corporal and twelve privates, to be left

as a Guard at the Navy Yard. The Officers, non-commissioned Officers and men from Philadelphia from Headquarters, and from Norfolk will concentrate at Fortress Monroe, at the farthest by Friday the 27th inst., in order to be in readiness to take the Steam Packet Saturday the 28th for Charleston, South Carolina. The Commandant will be at Fortress Monroe by the 28th, and will take Command of the Force collected there. Captain Harris you will direct to proceed on the service with you."[58]

Colonel Commandant Henderson on May 30, 1836 at Washington wrote a letter to Lieutenant-Colonel John M. Gamble at New York that "during my absence on the Campaign, Lieutenant-Colonel Wainwright will remain at Headquarters."[59]

On June 1, Colonel Henderson wrote Lieutenant-Colonel Wainwright: "During my absence on the campaign against the Creek Indians, I leave you in command at Head Quarters. There will be little other than bureau duty to attend to, with which you are so familiar as to render it unnecessary to give any detailed instructions.

"Three Sergeants (for duty) 1 Corporal and 12 privates are left to furnish a guard for the Navy Yard, to consist of 1 Sergeant 1 Corporal and 6 Privates. One of the Music left behind will have to act lance Corporal as a relief for the guard at the Navy Yard. The Sergeant Major will sleep

in Barracks. Corporal Brown has always been detailed to attend to the grounds and outside porches around the House occupied by me; I have to request that he be so continued unless it should be necessary to give him other employment or duty.

"Sergeant Triguet is left to assist in attending to the duties at Head Quarters. He is a respectable old man, and has no other failing than that which but too often attends an old soldier; he has however almost corrected this habit.

"I leave you a most valuable soldier in the Sergeant Major whose health entirely incapacitates him from going on the expedition. He is anxious to go but as a matter of duty I have ordered him to remain as I cannot take any other than able-bodied men on such arduous service.

"Since writing the above I have decided to leave the Band, and you will be pleased to divide it into two guards to keep up one Sentinel at Head Quarters. The Drum and Fife Majors, will take alternate days with the Sergeant Major to remain in Barracks, in charge of them, so that one of those non-commissioned officers will be at all time within them.

"My clerk, Mr. Fulmer, can take charge of the School in barracks, until the regular teacher returns and can at the same time, attend to the business of this office".[60]

"In compliance with this order (of May 21) on the first

of June 1836 the forces at Headquarters proceeded to Fort Monroe where they were joined by detachments from Philadelphia, and Gosport consisting in all of one Colonel Commandant, one brevet Lieutenant Colonel, one Major, six Captains, eight First Lieutenants, four Second Lieutenants, twenty-three Sergeants, nineteen Corporals, seven Drummers, seven Fifers, and 198 privates."[61]

The following officers were from Washington: Colonel Commandant Archibald Henderson, Brevet Lieutenant Colonel and Paymaster Charles R. Broom, Captain and Commanding Company C James Edelin, Captain and Adjutant and Inspector Parke G. Howle, Captain and Quartermaster Elijah J. Weed, Captain and Commanding Company D William W. Dulany, First Lieutenant and Assistant Quartermaster Horatio N. Crabb, First Lieutenant and Adjutant Henry B. Tyler, Second Lieutenant and Commissary of Subsistence John T. Sprague, Second Lieutenant Edward L. West, Second Lieutenant Josiah Watson and Lieutenant of the Navy and acting Assistant Quartermaster William P. Piercy.[62]

The following officers were from Gosport (Norfolk): Captain Levi Twiggs, Brevet Captain James McCawley, First Lieutenant Landon N. Carter, First Lieutenant Francis N. Armistead, First Lieutenant William B. Stark, and Second Lieutenant William L. Young.[62]

The following officers were from Philadelphia: Lieutenant Colonel Samuel Miller, Captain John Harris, First Lieutenant G. F. Lindsay, and First Lieutenant Francis C. Hall.[63]

The Medical Staff was: Surgeon United States Navy and Chief of the Medical Staff John A. Kearney, and Passed Assistant Surgeon United States Navy George B. McKnight.[64]

The different detachments united into a battalion left Old Point Comfort on June 2 for Charleston, S.C., on board the Columbus. The total number was 305.[65] Arrived at Charleston on June 5. During the passage the whole force was organized into five companies, A, B, C, D, and G.[66]

On October 2, 1836 Lieutenant Colonel Robert D. Wainwright reported to the Secretary of the Navy that the "detachment of the Marine Corps for army service was immediately, previous to June 1, 1836, divided into companies, and has continued so since."[67]

They left Charleston on June 6 and arrived at Augusta, Ga. on the following day, Colonel Henderson reporting to Secretary Dickerson that they had arrived "on the 7th, and take up their line of march from Fort Mitchell tomorrow morning."[68] They "encamped at the Arsenal," while at Augusta.[69]

On June 10th Marines marched from Augusta and arrived at Columbus, Ga. on the 23rd. They thus marched 224 miles in fourteen days.[70]

General Scott wrote General Jesup, on June 21, 1836, that the next body of regulars expected was a detachment of Marines and they would probably be assigned the duty of establishing a depot "at Bryant's Landing, opposite to Fort Twiggs."[71]

"Colonel Henderson just arrived with the first detachment of the U.S. Marines," wrote General Scott at Columbus, Ga., to Brigadier-General R. Jones, of the Army on June 23.[72]

On their arrival at Columbus orders were received from General Scott to proceed to a camp fifteen miles below Columbus which was named "Camp Henderson." They reached there on the 24th having marched down the Chattahoochee River and formed camp at Camp or Fort Henderson on the western bank of that river. Their orders required them to erect a strong picket work as a place of deposit for provisions, etc., for the eastern wing of the Army.[73]

Colonel Henderson reported that on the evening of June 24 five Companies of Marines, with a train of wagons under his command encamped on the plantation of Mr. Forsythe; that they crossed the River on the 25th; that the "opposite

side of the River, for many miles above and below, was in the possession of a band of Creek Indians most actively engaged at that time in hostilities against the Whites;" that "Jim Henry, with the only party of hostile Indians of any consequence then in arms, occupied the Swamps within a few miles of the position taken by the troops under my command."[74]

On June 25 Companies A and D, under Captain Levi Twiggs, went out on a scout in search of Jim Henry.[75]

This first battalion of U. S. Marines was joined, on July 1, 1836, by the Second Battalion commanded by Brevet Lieutenant Colonel William H. Freeman.[76]

Colonel Commandant Archibald Henderson, commanding. Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Samuel Miller. Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Freeman. Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Charles R. Broom, Paymaster; Captain Parke G. Howle, Adjutant and Inspector; Captain Elijah J. Weed, Quartermaster; First Lieutenant George F. Lindsay, Assistant Quartermaster; First Lieutenant Francis C. Hall, Assistant Commissary; Surgeon, John A. Kearney, U.S.Navy; Passed Assistant Surgeon George B. McKnight, U.S.Army; Sergeant-Major James Gatchell; Captains Levi Twiggs, John Harris, James Edelin, William Dulany, James McCawley; Brevet Captain Benjamin Macomber; First Lieutenants, Alvin Edson, Henry B. Tyler, Landon N.

Carter, John G. Reynolds, Thomas L.C. Watkins, F.N. Armistead, George H. Terrett, William E. Starke, William E. Lang, and Andrew H. Ross; Second Lieutenants: D.D.Baker, L.F. Whitney, Edward L. West, Robert C. Caldwell, William L. Young, Josiah Watson, W.M.McArdle, and John T. Sprague.[77]

This battalion was made up of detachments from Portsmouth, N.H., Charlestown (Boston), Mass., and New York amounting in all to one Brevet Lieutenant Colonel, one Captain, six First Lieutenants, six Second Lieutenants, fourteen Sergeants, twelve Corporals, three Drummers, four Fifers, and 110 privates which detachment was organized into three companies, E, F, and H.[78]

On July 1, 1836 Henderson reported as follows to Secretary Dickerson: "Not a single casualty has occurred among the men notwithstanding their exposure to unusual fatigue and hard duty in a sickly climate. The erection of a picket on the right bank of the Chattahoochee, fifteen miles below Columbus and in the heart of the hostile country, was assigned to my command the day of our arrival at Columbus, so that we, were immediately ordered on hard duty. We have nearly finished two storehouses for provisions and we are now actively engaged in putting up the pickets and occasionally in sending out scouting parties to show that we are prepared for fighting as well as for

working. We were very near taking a body of Indians the first day we set foot on this shore. It is now expected that the Campaign will be closed in the course of ten days or two weeks as General Scott is now on this side of the river scouring the whole hostile country, and I daily expect orders to join him on this service. I have every reason to be satisfied with my men, indeed with the spirit that prevades almost the entire command. They have borne a fatiguing and rapid march of thirteen days from Augusta to Columbus in such a manner as to be able to at once to undertake and execute an arduous duty assigned to them."[79]

On the same date, General Scott wrote to Commodore Alexander J. Dallas that the "war against the hostile Creeks is supposed to be virtually over. Nevertheless, there are several hostile parties who have not surrendered themselves, and who are seeking opportunities to escape across the Chattahoochee into Florida."[80]

"I received" on July 1, 1836, "a note from Colonel Henderson, who is engaged in erecting a shed, etc., on this side of the river, at the head of the summer navigation, for the reception of Army supplies from New Orleans."[81]

"The zeal and promptitude which have uniformly been displayed by yourself and officers, in cooperating with the land service, deserves a higher commendation than any that

I could bestow," wrote General Scott to Commodore Dallas.

The Columbus Sentinel of July 1 reported that since their arrival at Camp Henderson the Marines had all enjoyed good health and spirits, and pursued their work with vigilance and promptness. "Their location being in a most exposed part of the enemy's country, it is a great privation for them to be confined to the monotonous duties of the camp, though well convinced of the importance of their present work. Their Camp has been for two successive nights roused by Indians lurking about, and approaching the picket sentinels within a few yards when they were fired on and pursuit immediately given, but no traces of them could be found. Last night, after the roll of the drum had ceased, a whoop was distinctly heard up the river, which no doubt was a signal to a party above. On Friday morning last, a Negro boy who had escaped from the Indians that morning, and who had been a prisoner some five or six weeks, was brought into the camp by Captain Love, of the Georgia Volunteers. He stated that a party of twenty or thirty had camped the night before within six or seven miles, and had left that morning for a large swamp not far off, no doubt Cowagee swamp, and that he saw Jim Henry that day, who advised them to go as soon as possible, and that he had been badly wounded in the shoulder. Captains Twiggs and

Dulany's companies, together with a company of Georgia volunteers, under Captain Love - the whole under the command of Captain Twiggs - was immediately despatched in hopes of overtaking them, but without success."[83]

On July 3 Companies A, B, C, and D, under command of Lieutenant Colonel Miller, went out in search of Indians on the Chattahoochee.[84]

General Scott, at Fort Mitchell, on July 4, 1836 reported to the Adjutant General that the day before "a party of United States Marines, a few mounted volunteers and friendly Indians, scoured the country between the Euchee and the Hatcheechubby thoroughly, and to the extent of about twelve miles up those creeks. Coming up last night in the steamboat, I learned from General Henderson, at his Camp, that sixteen women, boys and children were captured on the Chattahoochee - the warriors of the same party having escaped across the river, abandoning their families." I "shall tomorrow, send off Colonel Broome of the Marine Corps, with a communication addressed to General Wool." A P.S. to this report, by the General's aid, was - "General Scott desires me to say that his objects in sending Colonel Broome are to learn the state of things in the Cherokee Country and to say to General Wool that, probably, the detachment of United States Marines (about

400)" and some volunteers, "may soon be spared from this quarter to reinforce the Cherokee Army, should they be required".[85]

General Scott at the Headquarters of the Army of the South, Fort Mitchell, on July 1, 1836, wrote Governor R.K. Call, of Florida, that he would reinforce General Wool with a "portion of the regulars" etc., while "the remainder of the regulars and the Marines cannot fail to be wanted to escort the hostile Indians who have surrendered themselves and to wind up the war in this quarter, until late in the summer."[86]

In a letter to General Wool of July 4, General Scott at Fort Mitchell wrote that "Lieutenant-Colonel Broome, of the Marines, from mere impulse of patriotism, has volunteered to bear this, my first letter. It will probably be agreeable to him to bring me your reply. * * * I shall, no doubt, very soon be able to send you very efficient reinforcements: about 400 U.S. Marines certainly, * * * I have requested Colonel Broome, whom I have the pleasure of presenting to you, to get, in going and returning, the best information as to the routes leading to the Cherokee country, the means of subsisting etc."[87]

There were 400 Marines serving under Major General Winfield Scott, on July 5, 1836.[88]

General Scott, on July 5, 1836, at Fort Mitchell, ordered the Commanding Officer of the armed steamer AMERICAN, Licutenant Johnson; "In ascending this river, I wish you to stop at Colonel Henderson's post, a few miles below this, and bring up the detachment of U.S. Marines under his command or so much of it as your boat can conveniently accommodate to Fort Mitchell."[89]

General Scott about this time was relieved by Major General Thomas S. Jesup.[90] In General Order No. 29 of July 7, 1836 at Columbus, Ga., General Scott wrote: "To the regular troops, including the United States Marines, the usual praise is due. They have exhibited steadiness, discipline and an eager desire to come in contact with the enemy. Although disappointed in that favorite wish, they have in all respects, rendered themselves highly useful."[91]

A detachment of twelve Marines, bluejackets, three officers, and four midshipmen left the Concord at Tampa Bay at 4:31 p.m., June 1, 1836 in the revenue cutter Washington on an expedition to St. Marks (St. Augustine). The Washington arrived back on June 25. The officers, Marines and bluejackets returned in the launch and Black Hawk.[92]

On July 1, 1836 General Scott, at Fort Mitchell, wrote

to Commodore Dallas who was at Pensacola, that "the zeal and promptitude which has uniformly been displayed by yourself and officers in cooperating with the land service, deserves a higher commendation than any I can bestow."[93]

This praise did not reach Commodore Dallas before he wrote the following letter, dated July 3, 1836, to Secretary of the Navy Mahlon Dickerson: "The fact is that the Navy have been constantly on the alert and have afforded at every point on the Coast of Florida, all the aid and assistance in their power, for which not the least credit has been given them nor have they been in any way noticed by the officers in command on shore. The Marines which I detached from this ship, have been marching and counter-marching, have done their duty with credit to themselves and the Corps and are still detained at Fort Brooke, but no mention is made of them in the numerous letters of General Scott, Col. Lindsay or any one who has had the direction of their movements, with the single exception of Major Belton whose grateful feelings for the timely aid afforded the Garrison at Fort Brooke appears from his letter addressed to me. It appears by the report of Lieutenant Adams * * * that from the apprehension of an attack a detachment of Seamen from the Concord were kept marching from St. Marks to Tallahassee from Tallahassee to St. Marks and back, in consequence of

reports and alarms not duly inquired into and having no foundation in truth."[94]

Fourteen Bluejackets, one Marine, and four officers left the Concord on July 6, 1836 in the first cutter for an expedition.[95]

The following day two officers, eleven bluejackets and seven Marines under Sergeant Joseph S. Wright left the Concord on the schooner Motto on an expedition to Indian Key that was reported in imminent peril.[96] They returned aboard the Washington to Pensacola Bay on August 18, 1836, with the information that all the combustible part of the Cape Florida Light House had been burnt but that they had rescued the keeper.[97]

The Concord left Tampa Bay early in August. Previous to leaving Lieutenant N.S. Waldron was ordered to embark on board. The Concord arrived at Pensacola Bay on August 5 "bringing with her the detachment of Marines" of the Constellation and the St. Louis, that had been stationed at Fort Brooke.[98] The Army did not wish to give up these Marines.[99] A detachment from the Grampus was placed on shore to protect the Rancho at Tampa Bay on August 25, 1836[100]

After the departure of General Scott and the resignation of General Clinch, the command of the troops in Florida, pending the arrival of General Jesup, devolved

on Governor Call. General Jesup assumed command on December 8, 1836, relieving Governor Call.[101]

Company E, under Captain George W. Walker, was ordered out from Fort Henderson on July 6, 1836 to scout that neighborhood, where it was said there were Indians.[102]

On July 7, 1836, General Jesup, at Tuskeegee, Ga., wrote to General Scott that "if the Marines can be spared, I request that they be placed on the mail road from Columbus to Tuskeegee, subject to my orders, say twelve to fourteen miles from Columbus at the stage house."[103]

Many scouting parties were sent out between July 11 and September 18, 1836. The most important was that under Captain Levi Twiggs to Upton Mills to intercept the passage of the Indians into Florida.[104]

On July 24, Company F was at Camp at Tuskeegee, marching to join Colonel Henderson, who was stationed with three companies about eighteen miles in advance of Camp Tuskeegee, at a point called Talese, where the great body of Indians were assembled to emigrate to Arkansas. Lieutenant Colonel Miller, with four companies, was encamped at Elliot's Farms, ten miles from Fort Mitchell. Lieutenant Colonel Freeman was president of the general court-martial that assembled at the Camp at Tuskeegee on July 25.[105]

The muster rolls show Company A, under Captain Twiggs

and Company D, under Captain Dulany at Uptons Mills, Ga., Company B, under Captain Harris, Company C, under Captain Macomber, Company E, under Captain Walker, Company F, under Captain Brevoort, Company G, under Captain McCawley, and Company H, under First Lieutenant Edson, all at Tallassee.[62]

Company A was at White Plains, Ala., on August 31 while the other Companies were at Tallassee.[62]

Colonel Henderson in writing a letter on August 30, 1836 to General Jesup, put on top of his letter the following: "Headquarters of the Marine Corps, Tallahasse."[106]

A muster roll shows Corporal George R. Watkins and three privates on the Revenue Cutter Washington having joined from the Vandalia. The muster rolls show Companies A, C, D, E, and F, at Adams, Ala., while the others were at Fort Mitchell.[62]

"General Jesup was using his exertions to bring into Florida at an early period the detachment of Marines, commanded by Colonel Henderson, as also the regiment of Creek Volunteers, under Colonel Lane; but the fall of water in the Apalachicola River, defeated his designs. That portion of the Marine Corps had gone through the Creek Campaign, and was now in high order and perfect discipline. Their various duties had been performed with alacrity and zeal,

and only required another field to fulfill their own anticipations. This detachment numbered 380 men, and 24 officers."[107]

Private Thomas King of Company E died of disease at Columbus on September 11, 1836.[108] On the night of October 13, 1836 Private Daniel Brown, Company D, was drowned in the Chattahoochee River.[108] Sergeant Henry Marks of Company A died of disease at Fort Brooke on November 9, 1836.[108] Private John Shillingsford of Company E died of disease at Fort Brooke on December 7, 1836.[108]

A letter written at Fort Mitchell, Alabama on October 3, 1836 stated "that the Corps had just received orders to proceed to Florida forthwith, and that they were to take up the line of march that afternoon or the next morning."[109]

About October 15, 1836 Major General Jesup entered Florida Territory with part of the forces employed in subduing the Creek Indians. Governor Call was directed to turn over the command of the Florida army to General Jesup.[110] The muster rolls for October, November, and December show the six companies of Marines at Fort Brooke, Tampa Bay.[62]

Captain Parke G. Howle, of the Marines, served as Acting Assistant Adjutant General of the Army of the South from October 26, 1836 to May 22, 1837.[111] On May 27, 1836

Colonel Commandant Henderson detailed Second Lieutenant John T. Sprague as Commissary of Subsistence to the Marines during the Creek Campaign. Brevet Captain Benjamin Macomber served as Assistant Commissary of Subsistence and Acting Quartermaster from January 1, 1837 at Fort Foster to April 24, 1837 when he rejoined Company E. First Lieutenant George F. Lindsay served as Brigade Quartermaster.

The Adjutant General of the Army, on November 11, 1836, wrote Marine Corps Headquarters, that "the several officers of the Marine Corps serving with the Army in Florida, who have from time to time reported in person at this office, pursuant to the orders of Colonel Henderson have for the most part been verbally directed to report to you; I therefore, have now to request, that you will furnish me with a list of all the Marine Officers who have left their Corps serving with the Army in the South, specifying the time they respectively reported to you, their present position, and the reason of their absence."[112]

A detachment of Mounted Marines, with a detachment of the Army, was sent out from Tampa Bay on November 12, 1836 in search of Indians.[113]

Colonel B.K.Pierce, Commanding Eighth Division, at "Headquarters, Army of Florida, Camp near Volusia, November 26, 1836," reported to Governor Call regarding the action

with the Seminoles on November 21, 1836. Colonel Pierce moved out in four columns at early dawn on the 21st in search of the enemy represented to be in a large force in the Wahoo Swamp. The Third and Fourth columns were formed of Creek Volunteers that included some Marine Officers. After marching about five miles and when within four hundred yards of Wahoo Swamp, the enemy "appeared in force on the edge of the Hammock which skirts the swamp." Colonel Pierce reported that Lieutenant Andrew Ross,[114] of the Marines, among many others, "behaved throughout the day with great energy and bravery." Lieutenant (Acting Captain) Ross served in the column of the gallant column of Major Morris. Colonel Pierce refers to him as the "brave Captain Ross," who with others "for a considerable time, sustained an unequal combat with the enemy, holding him in check until the arrival of the artillery and volunteers." "The loss in my division consists of Major Moniac, an Indian Chief, and two Indians killed," reported Colonel Pierce; "Captain Andrew Ross and three Indians wounded, of the Creek Volunteers," and five others killed and seven wounded.[115] Lieutenant Ross died of his wound on December 11, 1836 at Fort Heileman.[116]

General Jesup reached Tampa Bay on October 20, 1836,

but was detained there, for want of transportation, until November 27, 1836, on which day he moved towards the scene of Governor Call's operations on the Withlacoochee. With 400 men he joined Governor Call at Volusia on December 4, 1836, and relieved him four days later.[117]

A detachment of Marines, under Colonel Henderson, left Tampa Bay on November 27, 1836 and returned on the 28th. On the following day a force of Marines and Army Artillery and about three hundred Alabama Volunteers left Tampa Bay with ten days provisions for the interior to report to Governor Call.[118]

On November 30, 1836 there were eighteen Marine Officers and 303 Marines serving under General Jesup.[119]

On December 4, 1836 a detachment of one hundred Marines and one hundred Army troops were sent as an escort to guard the supplies ordered to Fort Alabama.[120]

President Andrew Jackson in his Seventh Annual Message to Congress on December 5, 1836 wrote that "the military movements rendered necessary by the aggressions of the hostile portions of the Seminole and Creek tribes of Indians, and by other circumstances, have rendered the active amployment of nearly our whole regular force, including the Marine Corps, and of large bodies of militia and volunteers."[121]

Marine officers serving as part of the Army of the South were still under the jurisdiction of the Army when they went North. For instance on November 11, 1836 the Adjutant General of the Army in Washington wrote Second Lieutenant D.D. Baker, who was also in Florida, that he had received Lieutenant Baker's letter of November 11 "enclosing a copy of Colonel Henderson's order dated, 'Apalachicola, October 26th,' directing you on Surgeon's Certificate to report yourself to this Office for further orders, and in answer, I have to only to state, that as soon as your health will permit, you will return to the Army in Florida, and report for duty to the proper officers."[122]

First Lieutenant Francis C. Hall, was also directed to return to the "Army of Florida" from Washington as soon as his health permitted.

"This is the only answer I feel authorized to give it being the fixed purpose at General Headquarters not to diminish the force operating in Florida, by authorizing the absence of any officer employed with the troops there," wrote General Jones to Lieutenant Hall.[123]

Special Order No. 91, dated December 13, 1836, of the War Department provided that "the officers of the

Marine Corps, who have been serving with the Army at the South, pursuant to General Orders #33, and who have, in consequence of ill health, or other sufficient causes left the Army in the field by authority of the Commanding General with instructions to report at this Office are now considered as relieved from further duty with the Army; and they will accordingly report for orders to Lieutenant Colonel Robert D. Wainwright of the Marine Corps."[124]

"Learning, by express from Colonel Henderson, of the arrival of Commodore Dallas, " reported Brigadier General Jesup to the Secretary of War on December 23, 1836, "I came hither (Fort Brooke) to arrange with him a plan of combined operations."[125]

Secretary of the Navy Dickerson in his annual report for 1836 wrote that: "It was believed that our commerce in the Gulf of Mexico, and in the West Indies, would be more exposed than in any other quarter. To meet the apprehended danger, an unusually large force has been placed at the disposal of Commodore Dallas, the commander of the West India station. In addition to the vessels already stated as forming his squadron, three revenue cutters and three steamboats have been placed under his command and he has been charged with the complicated duties of protecting our commerce, of preventing the importation of slaves into

Texas or the United States, and of co-operating with the officers of the Army and Militia in prosecuting the war against the Creek and Seminole Indians; in the performance of all which duties his squadron has rendered the most essential services to the country.

"It is confidently hoped that the claims of this Corps will receive the early attention, which their necessities require, and to which they are entitled by their merits - merits which are much strengthened by their patriotic conduct, in volunteering their services in a campaign against the Creek Indians, in which they distinguished themselves by their zeal and perseverance in the duties assigned to them. As, however, they have been attached to the Army, while on this campaign, their merits will more appropriately receive the notice of the War, than of the Navy Department."

The St. Louis sailed from Pensacola Bay on October 1, 1836 and relieved the Warren at Tampa Bay. The Vandalia, with all the Marines of the Squadron except those of the St. Louis and accompanied by the Revenue Cutter Washington sailed on October 2, 1836 from Pensacola Bay for Key West. A plan was prepared for an expedition of the Marines and a party of bluejackets under Lieutenant Levin M. Powell of the Navy to proceed from Key West to Cape Florida and New River

to capture two hundred Seminoles in a night attack.[126] Lieutenant Powell's expedition, accompanied by the Washington, left the Vandalia at Key West in eight boats, on October 13, 1836. It was formed of nine officers, including First Lieutenant N. S. Waldron and Second Lieutenant F. B. McNeill of the Marines, ninety-five Marines and fifty bluejackets. Mr. Stephen Mallory and Dr. Leitner accompanied the expedition.[127]

The expedition reached Cape Florida on October 21. A detachment was sent to inspect the late settlement at the mouth of the Miami River. "On the ensuing night, Lieutenant Waldron, with a strong detachment, ascended the Miami to the head of navigation, and reported the settlements utterly destroyed, though not recently." A secret descent upon the New River country was next started. The Marines under Lieutenant Waldron, ascended the Ratones River to its head waters, and marched upon the New River. In the meantime the Bluejackets entered the New River from the sea. The plan worked splendidly.[128] The expedition arrived back on board the Vandalia on December 9, 1836. Some of the Marines, however, did not return until December 15.[129]

On January 1, 1837, General Jesup, at Tampa Bay, reported to the War Department that the body of the Indian Forces were south and southeast. "Commodore Dallas has sent

sixty sailors to garrison Fort Foster, twenty-five miles east" of Tampa Bay. The Commodore, on December 31, despatched a garrison to Fort Clinch, "and has promised a garrison for" Tampa Bay.[130]

Commodore Dallas aboard the Concord at Tampa Bay wrote Secretary Dickerson on January 2, 1837 as follows:

"On my arrival here, from Key West I found this post in charge of Colonel Henderson of the Marines, and Major General Jesup in the field. Understanding that a messenger was to be despatched to the latter, I concluded to inform him of my arrival, and tender to him the co-operation of the force under my command, in the manner following:- That if he would place in charge of the Officers, Seamen and Marines of the Squadron, Fort Clinch on the Cuithlacoochee, Fort Foster on the Hillsborough, Fort Brooke, the Forts at Dade's Battle ground, and at Volusia, I would detach officers and men sufficient to protect, defend and keep those posts, to the end, that the General being relieved from their protection, and thereby enabled to concentrate all the troops belonging to the Army of the South, might take the field with a much larger and more efficient force, than he otherwise could do.

"After conferring with the General he has consented that the Navy shall occupy and command at Forts Clinch,

Foster and Brooke, and officers and men have been detached for that service, Viz: to Fort Clinch, Lieutenant Bell, Midshipmen Hoban and Morgan, 38 seamen and 12 Marines; to Fort Brooke, Lieutenant Leib, Midshipmen Mix and Wingate and sixty Seamen. 25 Marines will be added to that post; to Fort Brooke, Lieutenant Adams, 3 Midshipmen, Reed Barrett and Shields, with about 100 men, the number to be increased to 200 Seamen and Marines, on the arrival of the other Vessels. The post will then be placed in charge of a Master Commandant.

"The Steamer Major Dade, (Lieutenant Hunter, Commanding) has gone on with a party of sixty Marines to make a descent on a party of Indians, said to be at or near a stream called Crystal or clear river. She will return to this in course of a few days.

"The Steamer American (Lieutenant Johnston, Commanding) left this 31st Ulto. with the party of seamen and Marines, for Fort Clinch under Lieutenant Bell.

"The St. Louis, sailed for Pensacola 25th Ulto., with orders to the Vandalia, Natchez and Grampus, should they have arrived there, to repair to this port without delay.

"Boats of very light draught of water are now being built by the Carpenters of this ship, one of which will be finished in the course of the present week. In this,

I shall send a party with a competent officer to explore the Ouithlacoochee, above Fort Clinch to the head of Boat Navigation. The Boston will continue, for the protection of our commerce, cruising on the Coast of Mexico and Texas."[131]

On January 3, 1837, at 9:00 a.m., the Marines, with the exception of Lieutenant Colonel Miller and Company A, with the Army, left Fort Brooke for the interior in search of Indians and continued in the field until May 18, 1837 when they returned to Fort Brooke, during which time large and small scouts were sent out from the main body of the Marine Corps and Army.[132]

"I reported this morning to the General that (Brevet) Lieutenant Colonel Freeman had refused to go on duty as Officer-of-the-Day on the 4th, associated with Captains on the same detail," wrote Colonel Henderson on January 6. "The General immediately observed, that he must be arrested, and that a court would be ordered without delay for his trial. I suggested to him that a trial would be rendered unnecessary, by his giving an order, 'that Lieutenant Colonel Freeman should serve as Officer-of-the-Day as he had been originally detailed in connection with the Captains.' He concurred; and on the order being given, it was obeyed by that officer, who thus abandoned the position he had so singularly assumed."[133]

Orders No. 34, January 8, 1837 of the Army of the South, signed by Major General Jesup, at Fort Dade, provided in part:

"1. The Army of the South will be reorganized and divided into two Brigades.

"2. The First Brigade will be commanded by Brevet Brigadier Armistead and will be comprised of the Third and Fourth Regiment of Artillery (united into one regiment), the Sixth Infantry, the Alabama Volunteers, and one of the Battalions of friendly Indians.

"3. The Second Brigade will be commanded by Colonel Archibald Henderson, U.S.Marine Corps, and will be comprised of the First and Second Regiment of Artillery (united into one regiment), the Fourth Infantry, the Marine Corps, the Georgia Volunteers, and one Battalion of friendly Indians."

"9. (A mounted detachment was formed in each brigade.) "These (mounted) detachments will be united under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Miller, of the Marine Corps, who is charged with the duty, until further orders of guarding the convoys dispatched from time to time from the Main Depot at Tampa Bay to the several depots on the Fort King Road."

"10. Lieutenant Colonel Miller is also charged with

the command of such of the depots referred to as are garrisoned by regular troops."

"12. Fort Dade will be garrisoned by a detachment from the Second Brigade under Colonel Henderson * * *."[134]

"While in Florida" Captain John Harris "had command of Mounted Marines and did good service in that capacity," wrote Colonel Henderson to the Secretary of the Navy. Second Lieutenant Louis F. Whitney was junior officer in this Company of Horse Marines. There were two mounted companies at one period, one composed of Marines and the other of Army personnel. The latter was disbanded, leaving only the Mounted Marines.[135]

"The Creek Regiment of Volunteers, which later fought under Colonel Henderson, consisted of 750 friendly Creek Indians, including two chiefs, by the name of Jim Boy and Paddy Carr. They were mustered and paid as militia in the service of the United States, and officered mostly by the Army and one Navy officer and wore White turbans to distinguish them in battle from the enemy. The Seminoles looked on them with the greatest hatred, scalping all that fell into their hands."[136]

"The great body of the Seminoles are said to be south," reported General Jesup on January 10. "The moment the regular troops come up, which will probably be tomorrow,

I shall either send or take a heavy detachment in that direction."[137]

On January 12, 1837 General Jesup, at Headquarters near the Cove of the Withlacoochee, reported to Washington that he had despatched a force down the south side of the Withlacoochee, and that he, himself, "moved down the north side of the river with the Marines," and other troops, "in all about 700 men, for the purpose of clearing the country on both sides of every hostile band."[138] On January 17 General Jesup reported that he had "swept the swamp of the Withlacoochee" and fifty-two Negroes and three Indians had been captured, but Powell escaped.[139]

Lieutenant Colonel Samuel Miller, who on January 20, 1837 was "commanding Escorts and Posts on the Route to Fort Armstrong Garrisoned by the Army," expressed a desire to accompany the Army on its first and second movement into the interior. Major General Jesup on the above date wrote Miller praising his services and stating that the duties he was perfoming was more important than any others he could be detailed to.[140]

On January 19, 1837 Commodore Dallas reported that "Fort Brooke, Fort Foster and Fort Clinch are still garrisoned by Seamen and Marines of the Squadron," also that the Major Dade and American had returned to Tampa Bay from the

examination of Crystal River and Vacasassa Swamps.[141]

A force of Marines out three days from Fort Armstong, near Dade's, returned the 20th of January.[142]

The Major Dade left Tampa Bay on January 23 for the Withlacoochee carrying a specially constructed boat to ascend that river to the head of boat navigation, above Fort Clinch.[143]

Private Alexander Burke died of disease near Fort Armstong on January 20, 1837.[144] Private John Miller, attached to the Marine Barracks, Pensacola, died at the Naval Hospital near the Navy Yard on January 24, 1837.[145] Private Thomas Irwin was wounded by a musket ball at Fort Armstrong in January of 1837 "supposed by accident." Private William W. Vancleaf, of Company D, died of disease on February 21, 1837 and Private John Sweeney of Company E, at Tampa Bay. Private James O'Neill of Company E, died of disease on March 1, 1837 and Private John Reardan of Company C, on March 14, 1837 at Fort Brooke.[144]

Commodore Dallas, on January 27 reported that he had hopes "in the spring" that "a portion of the force now cooperating with the Army will be enabled to rejoin their ships."[146]

On the 22nd of January, 1837, the main body of the Army, under General Jesup, marched to the headwaters of

the Ocklawaha, where it was supposed were the strongholds of the enemy.[147]

Colonel Henderson described the Battle of Hatchee-Lustee, that occurred on January 27, in the following report[148] to General Jesup:

"Under your directions, I left the main army on the morning of the 27th, with the Mounted Alabama Volunteers, under Lieutenant Colonel Caulfield, and the company of Mounted Marines under Captain John Harris, and proceeded, accompanied by your aid, Lieutenant Chambers, on a southerly trail. Orders were left for Major Morris, with his command to follow as rapidly as possible * * *.

"The troops under my command then pursued the trail for about a mile, when we came to two diverging trails, one taking a south-easterly course, and the other more to the eastward. On these two trails, the signs were the most recent; and Lieutenant Chambers, with a few men, proceeded to trace out one of them, while the rest of the troops, joined here by Major Morris's, pursued the other. We had proceeded but a short distance, when a volunteer, sent by Lieutenant Chambers, brought information that fresh signs of women's and children's tracks were discovered, and requested a company to be sent to him. Captain Price's company of volunteers was ordered accordingly.

"About a mile in advance a Negro man was captured at a fire. He informed us that a large number of Negroes were in advance, and from forty to fifty Indians, with Abraham, were in our rear. He stated that he had left the latter body since sunrise in the morning.

"The determination was promptly made to retrace our steps and attack the Indians. Just as we were about to march, one of the volunteers came up and gave information that Lieutenant Chambers had overtaken a considerable force of Indians and Negroes. An order was given to proceed to his support, and a rapid movement made for that purpose. When we came up with him, he was in possession of two Indian women and three children, besides a body of Negroes taken by the Volunteers in the adjoining pine woods. He had, also, in his possession, over a hundred ponies, with a large quantity of plunder packed on them as well as several stand of arms.

"The main body of the enemy escaped in the swamp, and Major Morris was ordered, with his command, to pursue, and bring them in. He entered the swamp in accordance with the order.

"The remaining troops were then ordered to form and pursue the Indian force in our rear, and were ready to march, when a firing commenced in the swamp.* * *

"About half past eleven, the Marines, preceded by the officers, entered the swamp, and were immediately followed by the Alabama Volunteers. Four or five hundred yards after entering the swamp we arrived at a deep stream, from twenty to twenty-five yards wide, and found Major Morris's battalion engaged with the enemy across it. A tree had been felled from each side and formed the only way of passing it.

"The troops, as they came up, were ordered to extend to the right and left, and by a cross fire, to dislodge the enemy. * * * Their fire soon slackened, and an order was given to cross the stream, when Captain Morris (Major of the First Indian battalion) gallantly advanced on the log, followed by Lieutenant Chambers, Lieutenant Searle, Captain Harris, Lieutenant Lee, (Captain of the Indian Battalion), swam the stream at this time, and joined the officers on the other side. I attempted to cross in this way, but had to return to the log, and crossed there. At this stream, Private Joel Wright, of the Marines, was killed and Sergeant Daniel Cunningham and Private John M. Sullivan and Peter Foley, wounded, but not dangerously.

"Just as I was crossing, an officer was sent from Lieutenant Colonel Caulfield, on our right, for orders. He was directed to cross as rapidly as he could with his men, after the regulars and Indians had crossed over.

"We were then promptly joined by the Marines, Morris's Artillery, and some friendly Indians, and pursued the enemy as rapidly as the deep swamp and their mode of war-fare admitted.

"Another fire was received from them further in advance and their trail from the swamp was followed through an open pine woods, and traced till it again entered the swamp, three quarters of a mile from the place it came out. We were joined by Lieutenant Colonel Caulfield, and his men, who had been delayed in crossing the stream. The swamp was again entered, deeper and more difficult to pass, than it had been. The friendly Indians were directed to enter on each flank, while the Regulars and Volunteers advanced in the center. The Regulars were ordered to lead the march.

"After advancing about half a mile, the enemy again fired on us, but retreated on the advance of the troops. At this place Private (Drummer) Thomas P.)Peterson of the Marines, was killed, and Corporal (Sergeant Leonard) Stevens severely but not dangerously wounded.

"On a further advance into the swamp, a few more guns were fired by the enemy, who retreated as the troops followed them. * * *

"The loss of the enemy in these several attacks could not be ascertained, as the troops made no halt in the pur-

suit and returned after dark. One Indian, however, and two Negroes, were seen by the troops, dead.

"The result of this day's operations, was the capture of two Indian women and three children, and twenty-three Negroes, young and old, over a hundred ponies, with packs on about fifty of them. All their clothes, blankets, and other baggage, were abandoned by the enemy, and either taken or destroyed by us. * * *

"The Regular Troops, both Artillery and Marines, displayed great bravery, and the most untiring and determined perseverance. The Marines, however, I cannot refrain from mentioning in a particular manner. The killed and wounded show where they were, and render any further comment from me unnecessary.

"Lieutenant Whitney, of Captain Harris's company, and Lieutenant Brent, of Captain Morris's, were with their companies and shared in the dangers and fatigue of the day, in such a manner as to reflect great credit on them.

"I would recommend to the particular notice of yourself, and the Government, the five officers who first crossed the stream and who, in pursuit, constantly led the van. It would be as gratifying to me, as it would be just to them, that some marks of distinction be bestowed, where such gallantry has been displayed."[148]

Colonel Henderson modified his first report with the following:

"In the report made to you on the 28th January last of the operations of the previous day, two mistakes were made inadvertnetly, and which are now corrected.

"The first mistake is in not stating that the Negroes taken in the pine woods were captured by a detachment of Captain Will's company of Alabama volunteers, sent with orders to Captain Price. The second error is in mentioning Lieutenant Chambers as commanding the force that captured the Indian Women and children, the ponies, and other property of the enemy. Captain Price was in command."[149]

During this Battle of Hatchee Lustee the Sixth Regiment, under Major Thompson, "moved at the head of his corps, under General Armistead, to support Colonel Henderson, who commanded the advance of the Army," reported General Jesup; "and afterwards to attack the Indians concentrated in the 'Cabbage Hammock,' to the right of the Colonel's position."[150]

General Jesup asked that the "gallant" Colonel Henderson and other officers "be rewarded by the distinguished approbation of the Government." To "Brigadier General Armistead, Lieutenant-Colonel Caulfield, Major Thompson, Major Morris, and to Colonel Henderson (U.S.M.C.), Lieutenant-Colonel Freeman (U.S.M.C.), Major Kirby and Major

Graham * * * I am under the greatest obligations for the prompt, and efficient support which they have on all occasions, given to me during the expedition," reported General Jesup.[151]

Colonel-Commandant Archibald Henderson of Virginia was awarded brevet rank of Brigadier General, January 27, 1837 "for gallant and meritorious services while in command of the Marines in Alabama, Florida, and Tennessee, during the campaigns against the hostile Indians." Captain John Harris of Pennsylvania, was awarded brevet rank of Major, January 27, 1837 "for gallantry and good conduct in the war against the Florida Indians, particularly in the affair of Hatchee Lustee." Captain William Dulany was awarded the brevet rank of Major, March 3, 1843. Corporal Leonard Stevens was promoted to Sergeant and Private Josiah Whitcomb to Corporal for gallantry.[152]

Private (Drummer) Thomas P. Peterson and Private Joel Wright were killed in action in this battle and the following were wounded: Sergeant Daniel Cunningham (in both shoulders), Sergeant Leonard Stevens (in the thigh), Privates Peter Foley and John M. Sullivan (in the lip).[153]

On the 31st of January at three o'clock p.m., a White Flag was seen coming into the Camp borne by Abraham when arrangements were made for a meeting of General Jesup with

many of the Chiefs at Fort Dade on a certain day, at which meeting a peace was concluded.[154]

"The Army commenced its return march on the morning of the 4th. I left it yesterday about thirty miles back, and came in last evening. It arrived to-day in good health and fine spirits. Colonel Henderson's report, a copy of which is enclosed, will give you more detailed information of the battle of the Hatchee Luskee than I have been able to imbody in this report," reported General Jesup.[155]

Colonel Henderson was made a Brevet Brigadier General for his splendid leadership and achievements in this campaign.[156]

The muster rolls for January 31, 1837 shows Company A, under Captain Twiggs at Fort Armstrong, Company B, under Captain Harris in East Florida, Company C, under Captain Edson in East Florida, Company D, under Captain Dulany at Fort Dade and Company E, under Lieutenant Terrett in East Florida.[62]

The Logbook of the Vandalia at Tamps Bay on January 31 shows a detachment of bluejackets and 33 Marines leaving the ship for Fort Brooke. Also that two of these Marines returned on February 5.[157]

The subject of the departure of Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Freeman from Florida was preceded by some slight controversy. On February 1, 1837 Colonel Henderson wrote in his Journal: "Lieutenant Colonel Freeman informed me yesterday that he had spoken to the General on the subject of his return home, stating that he did so with my consent. I did assent to his making the application: on further consideration however his departure cannot be sanctioned by me, as other officers have quite as valid claims as he, for this indulgence. I sent word to him by Lieutenant Lindsay that I had come to this conclusion." Three days later the Colonel wrote: "Colonel Freeman sent by Captain Dulany a letter addressed to the General, stating that he had my full consent in making the application to be allowed to leave Florida, and asked of the General this indulgence. I noted on the inside of the letter, that I had assented with reluctance to his making the application. I also stated, that he had made a similar application to the War Department, which he denies. His letter is probably on file there. He read it to me at the time he sent it. He says it was a private letter." The matter was settled on February 8, Colonel Henderson explaining: "Lieutenant Colonel Freeman came over to my tent, and an explanation

took place between him and myself, the result of which was, that I agreed to give him orders to proceed to Washington, which were issued accordingly. Colonel Stanton came up while we were talking and I informed him that this had taken place."[158]

On February 8, 1837 a band, under Philip, attacked the post on Lake Monroe. Under orders of Commodore Dallas a small force under Lieutenant Johnson of the Navy took part in this battle. Lieutenant Piercy of the Navy, Captain of the friendly Indians, with his Indian Force, fought among the regular forces. One Army officer was killed and Passed Midshipman J.T.McLaughlim, U.S.Navy (a volunteer) was wounded.[159]

The U.S.S.American and her crew under, Lieutenant Johnson of the Navy, participated in operations with the Army up the Crystal River, also named the Wiwakiakki or Clear River, on February 9, 1837. Mackinac boats were used: "Midshipman Watkins, and Mr. Bayly, who volunteered his services, fought bravely throughout the whole affair."[160] Colonel Foster in his report commended Lieutenant Johnson, Dr. Parsons, Midshipmen Watkins, Borden and Boudinot, and Mr. Bayly.[161]

The muster rolls for February 28, 1837 shows Companies A, B, C, D, and E, at Fort Dade.[62]

Commodore Dallas arrived at Pensacola aboard the frigate Constellation on February 19 from Tampa Bay. He left Master Commandant Crabb "with about 100 Marines and 60 seamen in command of Fort Brooke." He reported to Secretary Dickerson that his cooperation in "garrisoning the Forts, Brooke and Clinch and Foster has enabled the General to carry into the field" a larger force.[162]

On March 6 an agreement was signed by the Seminole Chiefs and General Jesup at Camp Dade.[163]

Captain John Harris, of the Marines, carried General Jesup's report of the signing of this treaty, to Washington, leaving Fort Dade for the Capital on March 7, 1837.[164] Colonel Henderson at Camp Hillsborough seven miles from Tampa, wrote the following in his Journal on April 13: "The Indians come in slowly, but such is their characteristic, and I doubt not they will all be in this month or early in the next. We expect the first emigrating party to start the last of this week. So soon as this takes place, I shall ask orders to return to Washington. I did not wish to be premature in this request, and thereby do away any of the character which the Corps or myself has acquired on this service. I am anxious to leave Florida and our connection with the Army, without the shadow of a stain on our

escutcheon, and that the Corps shall return to its stations with an untarnished character. It has gone through both campaigns in great harmony with all the Corps, of all sort and kinds, with which it has been associated, Regulars, Volunteers, Indians and all and with almost uninterrupted good feeling towards all. We have some unquiet spirits among ourselves, which I have endeavoured to allay, so that no want of harmony should appear to others. Lieutenant Colonel Freeman etc. etc., are hard people to get along with. When we are obliged to come in contact with such men, we must take care to be right, and then they are powerless. They may present benefits from coming to us, but they cannot do much harm."[165]

On March 26, 1837 General Jesup, on account of the arrival at Tampa Bay of great numbers of the enemy, believed the war to be over and began to discharge the volunteers.[166]

The muster rolls show Companies A, B, C, D, and E, at Fort Dade on March 31.[62]

The April 30 Muster rolls show Company A, at Little Hillsboro, Company B, at Camp Henderson, Company C, at Fort Brooke, Company D, at Little Hillsborough River, Company E, at Fort Foster, and a detachment under Lieutenant Waldron at Fort Brooke.[62]

On April 2, Commodore Dallas reported: "The Steamer

American (Lieutenant Johnston) has been usefully and actively employed in transporting a party of captured Indians from the Suwannee to St. Mark's.

"Lieutenant Reynolds of the Marine Corps acting under the orders of General Jesup, aided by a detachment of Seamen from this ship, commanded by Acting Master J.K. Bowie have succeeded in getting the straggling parties of Creeks, Enchees and Seminoles (which have been the cause of much apprehension of danger in the neighborhood of Blackwater and even to the inhabitants of this place) to come in and submit to the orders of the Government. The whole, about seventy in number left this yesterday morning in a steam boat for Mobile Point. The promptness energy and discretion of the above named officers in producing this very fortunate result are deserving of all commendation.[167]

The Marines and Bluejackets of the squadron gradually were relieved of their duties at the Forts. The Logbook of the Concord, March 26, 1837, shows a detachment of officers, bluejackets and thirty Marines returning aboard ship, via the Major Dade, from Fort Foster. The Logbook of the Vandalia, May 19, 1837 gives the names of the officers bluejackets and 82 Marines under Lieutenant Waldron and McNeil returning aboard ship from Fort Brooke. Three Marines

"transferred by Colonel Henderson were received on board." The Logbook of the St. Louis shows a detachment of 44 Marines and Bluejackets returning aboard ship on May 29 via the Major Dade from the Withlacoochee.[168]

General Jesup, on May 16, 1837 wrote to Captain Thomas Crabb, Commanding Fort Brooke, as follows:

"By reports received from every part of the Territory, I am donfident that the war is over, and that the Indians, though they may not be readily assembled for emigration, will not renew hostilities. I shall be able to dispense with services on shore of the Naval and Marine force under your command, so soon as arrangements can be made by Colonel Henderson to relieve them. I have, however, to request that you remain, with the vessel under your command, in this bay, until a portion of the Indians be removed, to give assistance, should they fail to act in good faith. In dissolving the official relations in which we have stood to each other, so much to my satisfaction, for several months past, I cannot avoid the expression of the great obligations I am under to you and your command, for the uniform, steady, and efficient support which you have at all times given to me; a support most auspicious in its

effects upon the results of the campaign, and which I shall always remember with the liveliest gratitude."[169]

"Two Departments were created by an order from the Commanding General, dated 26th April, 1837. One of the Departments was placed under my command," wrote Colonel Henderson.[170]

Orders No. 108, of the Army of the South dated May 22, 1837 at Tampa Bay, was as follows:

"1. The presence of Colonel Henderson being required at the Head Quarters of his Corps, he will proceed to Washington City, and report to the Adjutant General of the Army.

"The Major General Commanding would be forgetful of what is due to merit, and would do injustice to his own feelings, were he to omit on the present occasion the expression of the high sense he entertains of the distinguished and valuable services rendered by the Colonel. He tenders him his warmest thanks for the able, zealous and cheerful support he has on every occasion received from him both in Florida and Alabama; and begs him to accept his best wishes for his future fame and happiness.

"2. Captain Howle, Adjutant and Inspector of the Marine Corps, and Surgeon John A. Kearney, of the Navy,

Medical Director of the Army, will accompany Colonel Henderson. The Major General thanks them for the zeal, efficiency and ability with which they have performed every duty which has devolved on them since they have been attached to this Army, and he assures them that they carry them with his best wishes and kindest regards.

"3. Until further orders Major Thompson will command the troops North of the Hillsborough and South of the Ouithecoochee (Withlacoochee); also Fort Armstrong so long as a guard shall be necessary at out posts.

"4. Lieutenant Colonel Miller will command, with his brevet rank, the Troops south of the Hillsborough.

"5. Assistant Surgeon Tripler will relieve Surgeon Kearney in the charge of the Hospital at this post; and he will have the direction of the Medical Department south of the Ouithlecoochee."[171]

Colonel Henderson and part of the Staff left Florida on the 23rd of May for Washington City,[172] leaving two Companies under Captain William Dulany and First Lieutenant George H. Terrett, the force of which united amounted to 189 including officers, with Lieutenant Colonel Miller in command.

"I left Florida on the 23rd May, 1837" wrote Colonel Henderson to Secretary of War J.R.Poinsett on October 7,

1837.[173] He arrived in Washington on June 19, 1837, accompanied by Captain Parke G. Howle, and Dr. Kearney of the Navy, and assumed command of the Corps on June 23, 1837.[174]

Upon the departure of Colonel Henderson, Brevet Lieutenant Colonel Samuel Miller became the Senior Marine Officer in Florida and also was Commanding Officer of Fort Brooke.[175] On May 24, 1837 Miller gave up command of th "several companies of Marines in the field" to Captain William Dulany, who commanded the "Corps in the field" from tha date to May 19, 1837 in addition to commanding Company D.[175]

The Marine officers, who had been serving as Army officers in Florida, still considered themselves as under Army jurisdiction upon arriving back in northern United States. On May 20, 1837 Lieutenant A. Edson at Portsmouth, N.H., requested instructions from the Adjutant General. That officer on May 29 directed him to report by letter to Lieutenant-Colonel Wainwright at Washington, and Lieutenant George F. Lindsay received the same on June 6.[176]

Companies A, B, C, D, and E, were at Fort Brooke on May 31, 1837.[62]

On June 2, 1837 First Lieutenant George H. Terrett was "detached to Fort Pike with Indian prisoners," and remained there in Command, until Major Zantzinger of the Army relieved him in September, 1837.[177]

On the night of June 2, 1837, Micanopy, the head chief, and two or three others, who had encamped with their folowers near Tampa Bay, the port of debarkation, were abducted and taken to the interior. Their disappearance was the signal for the breaking up of the camp and the renewal of hostilities.[178]

Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Miller wrote to Colonel Henderson in June from "Headquarters of the Troops South of Hillsboro, Tampa Bay," that "before this reaches you the information will have reached Washington that the Seminoles encamped in this vicinity have decamped and taken French leave. It is said that many of them are on the Ocle-wai-hoo and south towards the Cape."[179]

On June 5, 1837 General Jesup informed the War Department that the Indians who had surrendered and were in camp near Tampa for the purpose of emigration, were carried off by their own warriors, thus causing the unsuccessful termination of the campaign.[180] "This campaign, so far as relates to Indian emigration, has entirely failed," reported General Jesup, and he earnestly requested to be "immediately relieved from the command of this Army."[181] On June 15 General Jesup reported to Secretary of War Poinsett that the Army "as at present constituted," is a "mere apology for defense and can never fulfill the ex-

pectations of the country."[182]

Captain Allen reported to Brevet Lieuteant-Colonel Samuel Miller, U.S. Marine Corps, at Tampa Bay from Fort Foster, on June 29, 1837 with Bowlegs, brother of Alligator. Bowlegs was a very unwilling visitor. He stated that Micanopy and Jumper were at Casseeme Creek and that Powell (Osceola) was near Volusia.[183] Lieutenant Colonel Miller reported to General Jesup that "in consequence of the near connexion of this Indian with Alligator, I have deemed it advisable to secure him in the picket with the other prisoners." Also that "the sheds for the Marines," will be "completed early the next week."[184]

The Marine Guards of the ships of the West India Squadron were active throughout this campaign. First Lieutenant Nathaniel S. Waldron was particularly active and was highly commended.[185]

On June 2, 1837 Private Joseph W. Lyon, aboard the American at Pensacola, wrote Colonel Henderson that his enlistment had expired on May 22. "The company of Sailors and Marines to which I was attached arrived in this port on the evening of the 28th of May in the steam boat Major Dade from the Withlacoochee we was sent to our former ship the St. Louis. I informed Captain Paine my term of service had expired. He requested me to go the cruise in the ship I in-

formed him I had been unwell sometime previous and did not feel able to go accordingly I was sent back to the Major Dade the ship sailed at daylight the next morning and left me without any transfer or papers to certify that my term of service had expired from there. I was sent on board the Steam Boat American where I now remain under the command of Acting Master Boden, commander."[186]

Private John H. Durant of Company D, died of disease at Fort Brooke on June 29, 1837; Private Michael Sullivan of Company A, at Fort Brooke on July 15, 1837; Private George King of Company D, died of disease on August 3, 1837 during the passage from Tampa Bay to Philadelphia; Private William Steel of Company B, died of disease at Black Creek, Fla. on August 11, 1837; Private J.M.Woolfind of Company C, died of disease at Mullet Key on August 22, 1837.[187]

On June 30, 1837, Companies A, B, C, D, and E, were stationed at Fort Brooke.[62]

In addition to the Marine officers serving as part of the Army of the South and on board Naval ships in Florida waters the following officers served under the direction of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs: Second Lieutenant John T. Sprague, First Lieutenant John G. Reynolds and Second Lieutenant Thomas T. Sloan.[188]

Lieutenant Sprague resigned from the Marine Corps on

July 3, 1837 for the purpose of receiving an appointment as Army officer. He was the author of the book called "The History of the Florida War."[188]

A New Orleans newspaper reported, on July 2, 1837, that "Lieutenant Sloan, of the United States Marine Corps, one of the officers in charge of the emigrating Creeks at present at Mobile Point, arrived in town on Friday evening, for the purpose of making arrangements for the speedy removal of these Indians to Pass Christian, a location more healthy, and one chosen by the Indians themselves as affording better water, &c. We have been informed that he has effected the object of his mission, and that these friendly Indians will be removed to their new quarters immediately."[189]

On June 24, 1837 Colonel Commandant Henderson at Washington wrote Major General Thomas S. Jesup at Tampa Bay as follows:

"An order was sent from the Adjutant General's Office two days ago, that the position of the Corps now in Florida be sent to its stations as soon as their services could be dispensed with. This order was issued at my instance and in consequence of the Secretary of the Navy having desired me to say to the Secretary of War, that the services of these troops were required at their posts. Under these circumstances and from the actual condition of the troops

themselves, I cannot doubt that you will direct their immediate return to their respective stations. I hear that an authority to leave Florida has been sent you and I trust that the existing state of affairs in that Country will anable you to avail yourself of it in a very short time."[190]

General Jesup replied to the above letter on July 4 as follows:

"I received yesterday at Black Creek your letter of the 24th of last month. No order has been received in regard to the Marines; and if received it would be conditional. There is nothing within my power which I would not do to serve your Corps - I owe it too many obligations to be indifferent to its interests, or even to its wishes, but the condition annexed to the order puts it out of my power to act. The number of troops composing the Corps cannot be anstracted from service here without endangering the peace and security of the frontier. If the government would send recuits to fill the ranks even of the Infantry regiments the Corps might be spared, but I hear of no recruits except a few for the 6th and I do not understand when they are to be received.

"I have received no authority to leave Florida, but I take it for granted that when my failure to emigrate the

Seminoles shall be known, that a successor will be appointed to the command of the Army here. The sooner the better. I have no other wish than to join my family, and spend the remainder of my life on my farm, and in directing the education of my children."[191]

As early as June 5, 1837, Major General Jesup "asked to be relieved from the command" of the Army of the South. On July 8 Major General Jesup received word that the Secretary of War would grant the request. The press attacked Major General Jesup, for asking to be relieved and he decided to continue in command.[192]

Major General Jesup, on July 10, 1837 reported that "many of the companies serving in Florida are mere skeletons".[193]

Major General Jesup having ordered fifty Creek warriors to escort stores from Fort Dade to Fort King Lieutenant Colonel Samuel Miller, commanding Fort Brooke, reported, on July 16, 1837, that "Major Freeman can furnish but thirty men from the Creek Volunteers", that the rest were "sick or claim to be so", and that the Creeks were "anxious of joining their families and friends in the West."[194]

On July 8, 1837, Lieutenant Colonel Miller reported to Major General Jesup that "Bow Legs", brother of Alligator had been brought unwillingly to Tampa Bay, and was

secured "in the picket with the other prisoners". He also reported that the "sheds for the Marines" would be completed in about a week.[195]

General Henderson succeeded, after considerable effort, in having some of the Marines relieved from duty with the Army in Florida. On June 24, 1837 he wrote Major General Jesup: " An order was sent from the Adjt. General's office, two days ago, that the portion of the Corps now in Florida be sent to its stations so soon as their services could be dispensed with. This order was issued at my instance and in consequence of the Secretary of the Navy having desired me to say to the Secretary of War, that the services of these troops were required at their posts."[196]

Brevet Lieutenant Colonel Miller was relieved from duty in Florida Territory by Orders No. 151 on July 18, 1837. He was succeeded in command of Fort Brooke by an Army officer, and left Florida that month with orders to report to the Adjutant General of the Army.[197] He reported at Headquarters on August 18, 1837.[197] Captain William Dulany then assumed command of the Marines in Florida. Marine Officers serving under Captain Dulany were: Captain Benjamin Macomber; First Lieutenant T.L.C.Watkins; Second Lieutenant R.C.Caldwell; Second Lieutenant W.L.Young; and Second Lieutenant Josiah Watson.[198]

By an order of Major General Jesup, of September 2, 1837, a detachment of fifty Marines was ordered north. Captain Dulany reorganized his battalion into two companies.[199]

On August 10, 1837 Major General Jesup at Garey's Ferry, Florida, wrote Secretary of War Poinsett:

"I am apprehensive of the Indians obtaining powder from Havana or New Providence; and if a small Navy force, or even the cutters which were under the direction of the Navy last winter, could be spared, much advantage would result to the service. I desire that the steamers in the possession of the Navy be placed under my control, and if the officers who commanded them in the last campaign, Lieutenants Hunter and Johnson, could be assigned to the command of them during the approaching campaign, they would be able to render more efficient service."[200]

Secretary of the Navy Dickerson instructed Commodore Dallas to cooperate with the Army. In his reply, the Commodore wrote:

"It will afford me pleasure to do all in my power to aid General Jesup in his operations in Florida. I fear however that the same degree of alacity cannot be expected from the Navy as was exhibited during the last winter. Lieuts. Johnson, Powell and Hunter rendered every service that could be asked from them, indeed more than could be

fairly expected, nevertheless no mention of their services in the many, very many General Orders, lauding the merits, bravery, gallantry, perseverance, etc. of volunteers, militia and regular forces engaged in the War in Florida."[201]

First Lieutenant George H. Terrett who, with his company of Marines, had been garrisoning Fort Pike, was ordered, on September 2, 1837, to join Captain Dulany's command at Tampa Bay.[202]

On September 11, 1837 Henderson wrote Secretary of the Navy Mahlon Dickerson that he had received his order to put Marines on Frigate Columbia and Sloop John Adams; but that there were not "thirty men sufficiently drilled for the sea service at all the stations of the Corps", and urged "the return of that portion of the Corps on service with the Army," for "unless such an order is given, the appropriate duties of the Corps cannot be carried on."[203]

On November 8, 1837 Henderson wrote Secretary of the Navy Mahlon Dickerson that he had been informed that if sufficient Marines could be sent to Marine Barracks at Brooklyn, Charlestown, Mass., and Philadelphia "the watchmen could be dispensed with," and that this is an "additional reason for the return of the Troops from Florida."[204]

Private Isaac Elburn of Company D died of disease at

at Fort Monroe on October 1, 1837; Private William J. Henry of Company D died of disease at Fort Dulany, East Florida on November 17, 1837 and Private John Jackson died of disease at the same fort on November 22, 1837.[205] Orderly Sergeant William Tait died of disease at Upper Post Sannibar River on December 5, 1837.[206]

Major General Thomas S. Jesup in a letter dated November 21, 1837 to Secretary of War J.R. Poinsett acknowledged receipt of a letter from him by Second Lieutenant G.W. McLean of the Marine Corps. Major General Jesup "attached him to the Staff, as assistant commissary and assistant quartermaster."[207]

On November 30, 1837 there were four Marine Officers and 170 Marines serving in Florida under Major General Jesup.[208]

The Secretary of War, on December 2, 1837 reported: "Throughout the whole conduct of this war, the West India squadron has cooperated with the Army in the most active and efficient manner, not only by promptly furnishing every aid which the appropriate duties of that branch of the service required, but by the officers taking upon themselves the defence of posts on shore, and lending the aid of their professional skill in every situation in which it could be usefully applied, with that preserving courage,

zeal, and ability which have at all times distinguished our gallant Navy. The revenue cutters, placed under the command of the Commodore of that Squadron, have likewise rendered the most efficient service under the direction of that excellent officer. Part of the Marine Corps, which volunteered its services in Florida, and distinguished itself during the last campaign, still remains there; and it is hoped that they may be permitted to continue their valuable services to the army of the south until the close of the war."[209]

President Van Buren in his First Annual Message, December 5, 1837 wrote: "Additions have been made to our squadron on the West India station, where the large force under Commodore Dallas has been most actively and efficiently employed in protecting our commerce, in preventing the importation of slaves, and in cooperating with the officers of the Army in carrying on the war in Florida."[210]

In December, 1837, the last severe battle of the war was fought by Colonel Zachary Taylor at Lake Okeechobee. The Americans had 26 killed and 112 wounded.[211]

On January 1, 1838 Captain William Dulany, First Lieutenant George H. Terrett, Second Lieutenant Robert C. Caldwell, William L. Young, and Josiah Watson were "cooperating with Army, E.F."[212] First Lieutenant John G. Reynolds and Second Lieutenant Thomas Theodore Sloan were "on duty in the

Indian Department".[213] First Lieutenant Thomas L.C.Watkins was "under orders from General Josup, settling accounts with War Department."[214] Lieutenant John T. Sprague was also on Indian Emigration Service.[188]

Private John A. Perley of Company E died of disease at Fort Denaud, East Florida, on February 3, 1838; Private Richard T. Trask of Company E died of disease at Tampa Bay on April 2, 1838; Corporals Charles Pike and Matthew McKinley died of disease at Tampa Bay on April 14, 1838.[215]

Commodore Dallas while at Tallahassee, late in January, 1838, was informed that the Indians had burnt some houses and killed several persons, about twenty miles from that place, and that there was not sufficient force in the neighborhood which might readily be called into service to repel any further aggressions. He immediately ordered the Grampus round to St. Marks with the Marines of the Constellation, where she arrived about the 1st of February. They were temporarily stationed, under Lieutenant Waldron near the place where these hostilities were committed by the Indians, and were ordered to remain there until their services were required on board, or until the necessary protection for that part of Florida could be obtained from the Army.[216]

In a letter dated March 5, 1838 Major General Josup

thanked Commodore Dallas "for the prompt assistance which you so kindly rendered to the inhabitants of Middle Florida by detaching the Marines of the Squadron under your command to that section of country. Your offer to cooperate with me in closing the war, is an additional claim on my gratitude. Lieutenant Powell has not failed, he has cooperated with me most efficiently and is now at the point where he can enter the Everglades. He will penetrate them so soon as I shall have placed a force on New River sufficient to protect his movements which will be in a few days. His affair in this vicinity was most gallant though he was compelled to retreat to his boats with some loss."[217]

In April, 1838 Major General Jesup was ordered to proceed to the Cherokee Country and leave Colonel Taylor in command of the forces in Florida.[218]

The Marines under Captain Dulany "were sent to the Cherokee Country, and the entire submission of that formidable tribe ends their present connexion with the Army" wrote Brigadier General Henderson.[219]

In Orders No. 102 of April 29, 1838, Major General Jesup directed Captain Dulany to "proceed with the Marines under his command to Baton Rouge" where he would "receive orders in relation to his march to the Cherokee Country." The General also expressed to "Captain Dulany and the officers and Marines composing his command, the high sense

which he entertains of their good conduct, and of the faithfulness and energy with which they have performed their laborious and often disagreeable duties during the three campaigns which they have served under his orders. He tenders them the thanks of the Country and wishes them success and fame on the new Theatre to which they are now called."[220]

On the fifteenth of May, 1838, Major General Jesup relinquished the command of the Army of Florida to Brevet Brigadier-General Z. Taylor, then colonel of the 6th regiment of U.S. Infantry.[221]

Lieutenant Waldron and Assistant Surgeon Richard W. Leacock, U.S. Navy with 40 Marines, arrived on board the Concord from St. Marks, on May 21, 1838.[222]

First Lieutenant John G. Reynolds, of the Marines, took a leading part in emigrating the Indians and Negroes to their new homes in the West. These people, including the ninety that had been escorted to Fort Pike by Lieutenant Terrett in June, 1837, were situated at various places.[177] Agreeably to orders received from the War Department General Jesup detailed Lieutenant Reynolds to superintend the emigration, as disbursing agent, and W. G. Freeman as an assistant. Reynolds received instructions from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to gather the prisoners at Charleston, S.C. and to call at Tampa Bay and collect the

negroes there who were the "property of the Seminoles" and transport them to the West with those then at New Orleans (Fort Pike). These latter were nearly all women and children.[223] Reynolds left Charleston in February, 1838 on the brig Homer in charge of the Indian prisoners who had been confined at Fort Moultrie.[224]

Lieutenant Reynolds arrived at the "New Barracks below New Orleans," with a "party of Seminole Indians," on March 13, 1838. "Those located at Fort Pike, I brought over the succeeding day," reported Reynolds, but " the negroes not being expressed in the order, Major Zantzinger, the Commanding Officer, declined letting me have them without a positive order; the leaving of them created considerable discontent among the Indians many of whom being owners."[225]

Lieutenant Reynolds refused to leave New Orleans without these negroes. "General Gaines, in the meantime, arrived, and hearing the cause of delay, issued an order for turning them over" to Reynolds "for emigrating," and he, without hearing from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, made "every arrangement for ascending the Mississippi immediately."[225]

However, these prisoners at Fort Pike called the "Ninety Exiles," by some, caused Lieutenant Reynolds considerable trouble. On March 26, 1838 he wrote the Commissioner that the "Indian negroes will be received at Fort

Pike and brought" to the New Barracks below New Orleans via the Mississippi River. It seemed that eight thousand dollars had been refused by the Creeks for these negroes, according to Second Lieutenant Thomas T. Sloan of the Marines. Then a slave-dealer, with the apparent approval of the Government, had purchased them for fourteen or fifteen thousand dollars on May 7, 1838, and orders were issued on the following day to return these ninety negroes or Exiles to the Creeks who had captured them. Next, General Josup declared them prisoners of war in charge of Lieutenant Reynolds enroute to Fort Gibson in Arkansas. Finally, Reynolds embarked on May 21, 1838 with all except four maroons whom he discharged, and thirty-one negroes left in charge of the Sheriff. The Agent with the order for the ninety Exiles arrived at New Orleans one day later, but caught up with Reynolds at Vicksburg. Not being able to arrive at a satisfactory conclusion they all left Vicksburg for Fort Gibson on the 27th. The party was detained at Little Rock by low water and on June 3, 1838 Reynolds addressed a letter to Governor Samuel C. Roane of Arkansas explaining his predicament. Although Arkansas was a slave state the Governor instructed Reynolds to carry out his orders and deliver the negroes to Fort Gibson. Reaching the fort, on June 12, 1838, Reynolds turned the entire party of prisoners

over to the Agent appointed to reside with the Western Seminoles. Reynolds wrote to the commanding general of Fort Gibson on the day of his arrival but the General on the following day replied that he was unwilling to change the status of the negroes. Reynolds arrived back at New Orleans on June 23, 1838. The thirty-one slaves were still in the possession of the Sheriff. They were turned over to Reynolds four days later and sent on to Fort Gibson. That was the end of the imbroglio except that the Commissioner of Indian Affairs was very displeased with Lieutenant Reynolds.[223]

Captain Dulany's battalion (Companies D and E) of Marines joined Headquarters in Washington on July 23, 1838, the Commandant, on the 28th of that month reporting to Secretary of the Navy James K. Paulding:

"I have the honour to report to the Department the return of the Battalion of Marines from their tour of service with the Army. It will now be in my power to furnish a small guard on the Norfolk station. The Barracks there are in a condition to receive this detachment, if it be the pleasure of the Dept. to give the order."[226]

"In many former communications to the Department I have endeavored to show that the interests of the Navy itself are best subserved by the full and effective preservation of the Military Character of the Corps," wrote

the Commandant to the Secretary of the Navy. "The two past years establish a further fact that the Army has a like interest in this matter. As a proof of this I beg leave to refer you to the Commanding General of the South and to his official orders and reports in relation to the Corps."[227]

(Continued in Part Two)

INDEX FOR PART ONE of CHAPTER VI,
Volume II.

INDIAN CAMPAIGNS

1835-1842

Material and Sources
of
Chapter VI, Volume Two
(Part Two)

History of the United States Marine Corps

By

Major Edwin North McClellan, U.S. Marines
Officer-in-Charge,
Historical Section.

First Edition
JANUARY 6, 1932

FORENOTE

This compilation is not the final manuscript of this Chapter but represents only material and sources upon which it will be based. If details concerning the participation of the Navy and Army in any operation or incident described herein do not appear, such omission occurs only because it is impracticable in a history of this character to set forth more than the work of the Marines themselves. To do more than this would extend the history beyond a practical scope and size. In many of the operations described, the Navy or the Army, or both, have been present in greater strength than the Marines, and full credit is here given for their splendid achievements.

As a matter of convenience this chapter is divided into two parts.

The following form of citation is suggested if it is desired to cite, either in published works, or manuscript, any information contained herein:-

(McClellan, Hist., U.S.M.C., 1st ed., II,
Ch. VI, p--)

CHAPTER VI

CAMPAIGNS AGAINST THE CREEK, SEMINOLE AND CHEROKEE INDIANS, 1835-1842

Although, by the summer of 1838, all the Marines were detached from duty with the Army in Florida, a large detachment of them served with the Navy in the vessels of the Florida Squadron, popularly known as the Mosquito Fleet.[228]

The naval base or depot and naval hospital for this Florida Squadron was first at Tea Table Key and later at Indian Key, on the eastern coast of Florida, about seventy-five miles south of Cape Florida and about seventy-five northeast of Key West.[229]

This force, in the hands, as it was, of intelligent officers, in the discharge of their duty, and guided by the experience and ability of the commander, added much to the efficiency of operations, and caused the Indians inhabiting that quarter to fear the <u>sailors' boats</u>, who were as skillful in navigating the Everglades as themselves. Three depots were advanced to and within the swamp, thirty miles south of Fort Simmons, to which supplies were transported in wagons, from thence into the swamp. Officers and men packed on their backs, with a blanket, seven days' rations.[229]

Commodore William B. Shubrick succeeded Commodore Dallas in command of the West Indian Squadron early in

1839. In a General Order promulgated at Pensacola on March 11, 1839 Commodore Shubrick expressed his satisfaction "to the officers, seamen and Marines of the Squadron," at being associated with those who, under Commodore Dallas, had "rendered important service to their country in affording effectual protection to the persons and property" of American citizens.[230]

"In consequence of an arrangement made between the Secretary of War" and the Secretary of the Navy Commander Isaac Mayo, on April 5, 1839, was appointed to command a force consisting of the U.S. Steamer Poinsett, and Schooner Wave, and a number of barges, destined to cooperate with the land forces, under General Taylor, in Florida in the suppression of Indian hostilities. On June 14, 1839 Commander Mayo was ordered to sail in the Poinsett and informed that the Commander-in-Chief of the West Indian Station had been "instructed not to interfere with your movements." Mayo was not authorized to "wear the Pendant of a Commander of a Squadron."[231] The Marines of the Poinsett were under Second Lieutenant Thomas Theodore Sloan.

The Poinsett arrived at Key Biscayne on July 22, 1839. Accompanied by Lieutenant Sloan, Commander

Mayo proceeded up the Miami River the following day.[232]

A detachment of Marines were landed on Key Biscayne on July 24, 1839 and on the same date Lieutenant Sloan landed from the Poinsett with all the tents.[233]

The Indians having massacred several Americans at Coloosa Hatchee, on the west coast, Colonel Harney held Chief Tustee Nuggee as a hostage at Key Biscayno. Chief Mad Tiger had visited the Poinsett on July 29. The following day he and his party hurried up the bay in two canoes, evidently fearing that he would be detained. Commander Mayo hastily set out in pursuit. Lieutenant Sloan and nine Marines formed part of the expedition. Mad Tiger, nine Indians, and six squaws were captured and turned over to Colonel Harney as hostages.[234]

An expedition, under Commander Mayo, left the Poinsett for Cooboosahatchee with his barge, the barge Harney, barge Mayo and Second Cutter and returned at 7:30 p.m. Lieutenant Sloan and his Marines manned the Second Cutter.[235] Another expedition (Lieutenant Sloan and his Marines in the Second Cutter) set out from the Poinsett late the same day to Pine Island and returned

the following day.

On September 7, 1839, Commander Mayo, in company with Lieutenant Colonel Harney, U.S. Dragoons, Lieutenant Sloan of the Marines and Surgeon William M. Wood, U.S. Navy left the Poinsett at Key Biscayne for a visit to New River. The party returned the following day.[236]

Fort Lauderdale, on the East Coast of Florida, "being weak and an attack being expected from the Indians" Commander Mayo, on the request of Lieutenant Colonel Harney, proceeded there "with one of the Gun Barges and a detachment of seamen and Marines."[237]

As Fort Lauderdale was "weak and the Indians not to be depended on," Commander Mayo reported on September 18, 1839 that he had "left Lieutenant Davis and Lieutenant Sloan of the Marines with thirty seamen and Marines to aid the post" and "to cruise up and down the coast looking for illicit traders and vessels cast on shore."[238]

A detachment of eight Marines and twenty-two seamen of the Poinsett were landed, on October 12, 1839, to establish a fort at the mouth of the Miami. Five additional Marines joined this detachment on October 29.[239]

On the 2nd of December, 1839, Lieutenant John T. McLaughlin, commanding the Flirt at Baltimore, was directed to proceed with every possible despatch to such a point of the Coast of Florida as he deemed most proper for the commencement of the operations with which he had been charged, "giving every annoyance to the hostile Indians and cooperating with the Military Officers, whenever properly called on for that purpose." And on the 9th of December 1839, in addition to the instructions of the 2nd instant he was "directed to avail himself of occasions of leisure to make examinations and Surveys of the Coast of Florida and to make charts and drawings of the same and also to ascertain the prevalent winds and currents, the soundings." "Commander Mayo has been ordered to return to the North with the Poinsett and directed to leave his barges at Tea Table Key for your use, should you require them," wrote Secretary Paulding to Lieutenant McLaughlin.[240]

The U.S. Schooner Flirt, under Lieutenant McLaughlin, sailed from Baltimore on December 15, 1839, for Florida. Her Marines were commanded by First Lieutenant George H. Terrett.[241]

When Commander Mayo sailed from Florida in the

Poinsett he "left Lieutenant Davis to take charge of all the seamen and Barges, also the Marines under Lieutenant Sloan on that station."[242]

Secretary of the Navy J. K. Paulding, on December 30, 1839, wrote Lieutenant John A. Davis, that the Department desired him to continue in command of the Seamen, Marines, and barges of the Poinsett left in his charge by Commander Mayo if he so desired. Also that his command would be separate from that of Lieutenant McLaughlin which included the Flirt, Wave and Otsego.[243]

Lieutenant Davis exercised the alternative offered by the Department and on February 4, 1840 turned over to Lieutenant McLaughlin "the barges, seamen and Marines under his command, having determined to return to Washington".[244]

A detachment of twenty-four Marines and seamen from the Otsego on April 16, 1840, had a skirmish of about three hours with a group of 50 to 80 Indians. At the approach of reinforcements from the Flirt and Wave the Indians fled.[245]

While the Navy was conducting operations against the Indians, the Army was not idle. General Orders No. 22 of the Army, April 21, 1840 announced that

Brigadier General Armistead would succeed Brigadier General Taylor in command of the Army in Florida on May 1, 1840 and that on that date St. Augustine would be headquarters.[246]

The Wave left Tea Table Key on August 5, 1840 for Cape Romano carrying every man capable of doing service but five.

On August 6, 1840 a number of Spanish, Indians and Negroes crossed over to a small island called Indian Key, about twenty miles from the mainland and attacked the four or five familes residing there. Of these, Dr. Henry Perrine, a man of distinction, was murdered.[247] So were Mr. Motte, Mrs. Motte, and two children. A lad named Tusdy was drowned in a cistern in which he had concealed himself. Mr. Otis was wounded.[248] Information of this attack was received by Midshipman Francis Key Murray at Tea Table Key on the following morning. A naval depot and hospital was located on Tea Table Key. He had only five men fit for duty but reinforced by eight men who were ill, he started across to attack Indian Key. A naval barge was the transportation on board of which was placed several four-pounders. A forced landing was planned on Indian Key supported by

naval gun fire. The Indians opposed the landing with heavy shell fire which struck the boats and seriously wounded one man in the thigh. The Indians used the long guns on Indian Key, firing at the Americans with good aim. The American four-pounders returned the fire, but at "the third discharge, being obliged to fire them athwart ships, our guns rebounded overboard." The Americans then returned to Tea Table Key.[249]

Those who escaped found refuge in the schooner Medium then lying in the harbor. The Indians, about 135, retired from Indian Key at 2:00 p.m. on the 7th in thirty four boats.[250]

Lieutenant McLaughlin, on the Flirt at Key Biscayno, received word on August 8, of the capture of Indian Key. He transferred "all the Marines and crew" of the Flirt to the Otsego and arrived at Tea Table Key that night. The "Spanish Indians" had looted Mr. Jacob Houseman's Store, destroyed the town by fire "and retired without molesting our hospital and depot at Tea Table Key." Mr. Houseman was proprietor of Indian Key.[251]

Lieutenant McLaughlin on August 9, 1840, entered into a written agreement, with Jacob Houseman for the cession of the whole of Indian Key to the United States,

during the continuance of the Florida War, for use as a Military Post. Lieutenant McLaughlin moved his hospital and depot from Tea Table Key to Indian Key.[252]

Lieutenant Edward T. Shubrick, commanding the Otsego, proceeded in that vessel early in August, 1840 from Tea Table Key to Key Vaccas, the inhabitants of which island having appealed for help in defending themselves against the Indians.[253]

Secretary of the Navy Paulding, on December 5, 1840 wrote that Lieutenant McLaughlin had returned north in the Flirt and had since returned to Florida. "An additional number of Marines has also been attached to his command, with a view to operations on land against the Indians, as well as the protection of the lives and property of the citizens, and the prevention of the introduction of supplies for the use of the enemy."[254]

Navy Register, January 1, 1841 shows First Lieutenant Thomas T. Sloan and Second Lieutenant Isaac R. Wilson on the Flirt and Second Lieutenant Robert D. Taylor "on duty at Indian Key, Fla."[255]

Acting Corporal William Smith was wounded in a skirmish with the Indians on January 6, 1841 in Florida. He was promoted Sergeant on April 26, 1841 for "meritor-

ious conduct".[256]

Many Marines died of disease in Florida during 1841 and 1842.[257]

On the night of December 31, 1840 Lieutenant McLaughlin, with sixty Marines, under Lieutenant Sloan, and ninety seamen from the U.S. schooner Flirt and the barges Otsego and Wave started to penetrate the Everglades, in cooperation with one hundred troops under Lieutenant-Colonel Harney. The leading object was to surprise the town of Abiaka or Sam Jones.[258]

Two officers and fifteen men, in three canoes, left the Wave on March 3, 1841 "to examine the Everglades."[259]

Lieutenant Rodgers, with all the disposable Marines and seamen of McLaughlin's "Florida Expedition", embarked in canoes in March, 1841 to cross the Everglades from Harney's River to Marcos River, fifteen miles south of the Orloosahatchee.[260]

Three of the boats of the expedition, with Lieutenant Taylor of the Marines and two Midshipmen, returned to the Wave at Sangbell Island on April 14, 1841. Other boats under command of Lieutenant Sloan, of the Marines, returned to the Wave at Biddle's Harbor. Another group returned to the Wave at Biddle's Harbor, May 7, 1841.[261]

Brigadier-General Armistead turned over command of the Florida Army to Colonel W. J. Worth, 8th Infantry late in May, 1841.[262]

On June 3, 1841 the Wave at Indian Key sent thirteen seamen ashore for the Barges and also two Marines.[263]

An expedition under Lieutenant John Rodgers, left the Wave on July 30, 1841 on an expedition to the Everglades.[264]

The schooner Phoenix and the revenue cutters Madison, and Jefferson, were added to the Florida Expedition under command of Lieutenant McLaughlin in August, 1841.[265] In the same month the Department directed Colonel Commandant Henderson to "detail one First and one Second Lieutenant with fifty non-commissioned officers and privates for duty in the Florida Expedition. Of these, one Lieutenant and fifteen men reported at Baltimore for duty on the Van Buren. The remaining Lieutenant and thirty-five men reported to the New York Navy Yard for duty on the Flirt and Madison.[266]

The Marine Guard of the Schooner Flirt, with the exception of Lieutenant Sloan who had been left on duty at Indian Key, joined it at New York on June 24, 1841.[267]

Second Lieutenant James Maguire joined the garrison

at Indian Key from the schooner Van Buren on September 23, 1841 and Second Lieutenant Robert Tansill joined from the schooner Flirt on October 6, 1841.[268]

While the Marines of the Flirt, under command of Lieutenant Tansill, were landing at Indian Key on October 7, 1841 one of the cutters accidentally swamped and Acting Corporal M. Smith, Private M. Sawyer and two ordinary seamen were drowned.[269]

At daybreak on October 9, 1841, Lieutenant McLaughlin started out from Indian Key with a detachment from the Wave, Otsego, Van Buren and Marines from Indian Key to seek Chief Jones and his party of fifty-seven warriors, reported to be on the western skirts of the Big Cypress in the Everglades.[270]

While the expedition of Marines and seamen under command of Lieutenant John Rodgers, U.S. Navy was encamped on the Island of Synabel, East Florida, on October 30, 1841, Second Lieutenant Robert Tansill was detailed as Officer-of-the-Guard and a Passed Midshipman as Officer-of-the-Day. Lieutenant Tansill protested to Lieutenant Rodgers as he was a commissioned officer and the Passed Midshipman was not. He obeyed the order "to preserve harmony in the expedition". Lieutenant Rodgers

decided it was a correct detail. Lieutenant McLaughlin not only approved the decision of Lieutenant Rodgers, but said that "if Colonel Henderson was in the Expedition the youngest Midshipman in the Squadron should command him, if no other Naval Officer higher in rank was present." Lieutenant Tansill reported the affair to Colonel Commandant Henderson.[271]

On November 3, 1841 one hundred and fifty Marines and seamen and two companies of the Third Artillery, U.S. Army, left Fort Dallas, ascended the Carlosahatchee River and passed into the Everglades through Lake Thompson. They emerged, on the 8th, from a canebrake through which they had been two days breaking a trail, and entered the pine-barrens between Lakes Thompson and Okechobee. A canoe and a large boat, which had been taken on the Carlosahatchee at the massacre of Colonel Harney's command was taken. Fresh horse-trails and fires burning were found. The Indian guides identified the people as the band of Lew-fall-micco and were of the opinion that they were anxious to come in. Alec-Yohola and Ahha-Tustenuggee were sent to inform the Indians of this view. These two Indians failed to return for four days so the expedition started eastward on November 12.

Arrived at the Okechobee on the 13th, after crossing Lake Haik-Pachee. Following the south shore of the Okechobee the Americans re-entered the Everglades through the Cypress on the 16th, having been prevented from continuing around the Lake by a very heavy wind and sea that swamped several of the canoes. The expedition arrived at Indian Key, by way of Snake Creek, Rio Ratones, and Key Biscayne, on November 24, 1841.[272]

Lieutenant McLaughlin arrived at Key Biscayne on November 27, 1841 "with the entire force of the Expedition". He left that night with all his disposable force "to cooperate with Colonel Worth in the movement against the Fortune-Teller who, with all his people, was in the Cypress east of Cape Roma.[273] The Marines in this expedition were commanded by Lieutenant Sloan with Lieutenant Tansill as a subordinate.[274] This expedition arrived back at Biscayne on December 23, 1841. The vessels were towed over the bar and proceeded to Indian Key. In a few days a force of Marines and seamen was pushed directly into Mangrove Lake where The Prophet, or some of his people, had taken refuge.[275]

In February, 1842 the available force of the Squadron, except the crew of the Flirt, was disposed of in two commands to enter the Everglades from opposite sides, to Lake Okechobee with the hope that the enemy might "be caught in his fastnesses upon this Lake, which have never been yet approached, by the White Men." In the plan of cooperation for this expedition Colonel Worth undertook "to deposit provisions for the command at old Fort Centre on Fisheating Creek."[276]

Lieutenant Sloan, with his Marines, was ordered to report to Lieutenant Commandant Rodgers, who commanded the main column, "prepared with thirty days' provisions, for service in the canoes." This column was directed to arrive at Fort Center on Fish-Eating Creek thirty days after its departure. Lieutenant Commandant Marchand, with a detachment, was to join Rodgers at Fort Center.[277]

Second Lieutenant Robert D. Taylor, with a detachment of Marines, reported on board the schooner Madison on February 8, 1842.[278]

Rodgers' column finally consisted of bluejackets from the Madison and Jefferson and Marines under Lieutenant Taylor. It left Key Biscayne on February 15, 1842, after visiting Lake Tohopkeliga, Thlo-thlo-pop-ita

or Fish-Eating Creek, the Kissimmee, In-to-kee-tah or Deer-Driving Place the column arrived back at Key Biscayne on April 11, 1842 "having been living in our canoes fifty-eight days, with less rest, fewer luxuries, and harder work, than fall to the lot of that estimable class of citizens who dig our canals."[279]

Marchand's Column, consisting of detachments from the Van Buren, Otsego, Phoenix and Wave left Fort Dallas on February 9 and entered the Everglades. On the 11th it reached a distance of about eight miles from Cocoanut Island when the extreme shoalness of the water rendered the canoes useless. From here two detachments were sent out and scoured the country to the south and west. They returned in three days, one having contacted with Lieutenant Rodgers. Another detachment was sent out by Marchand on the 15th to the west to examine Long Key and other islands. Later Marchand crossed the Everglades to the source of the Shark River and reached the head of the Miami River. Marchand's column arrived back at Key Biscayne on March 23, 1842, after about forty days of "great hardships".[280]

Lieutenant Sloan, of the Marines, since the return of the above columns was "employed" with his command

on the coonti (coontie) grounds between the Miami and New Rivers with instructions to explore every acre of them.[281]

"The Marines under Lieutenant Sloan, in examining the country between Miami and New Rivers, came upon five distinct settlements of Indians; the first of them within five miles of Fort Dallas between the Little River and Arch Creek. The instant he was discovered signal fires sprang up in every direction, as if by magic, and fields and settlements were as suddenly deserted."[282]

Two companies of the Third Artillery, U.S. Army having been ordered to Cedar Key from Fort Dallas and Fort Lauderdale, late in 1841, these two forts were "garrisoned by Marines" and transferred to the command of Lieutenant McLaughlin.[283]

On May 2, 1842 Lieutenant McLaughlin left the Flirt with 45 Marines and seamen for an expedition into the Everglades. Five Marines and others returned to the Flirt in the Wave from the expedition on May 26, 1842.[284]

Second Lieutenant Robert D. Taylor was detached from Indian Key on June 7, 1842 and joined Headquarters, Washington D.C. on June 30, 1842.[285]

Lieutenant Tansill, of the Marines, went aboard the

Wave at Key Biscayne, on May 23, 1842 for passage to Indian Key.[286] Lieutenant Tansill, at Indian Key, was ordered to proceed to Headquarters, Washington where he reported on August 8, 1842.[287]

Eighteen Marines commanded by Lieutenant Sloan, arrived on board the Jefferson from Fort Dallas on July 6, 1842.[288]

Lieutenant Sloan was detached from Indian Key and joined Headquarters, Washington on August 10, 1842.[289]

This Florida Squadron and the Marines were withdrawn from service in Florida in the early summer of 1842.[290]

Colonel W. J. Worth, Commanding the Army of Florida, on June 14, 1842, at his headquarters at Cedar Key, wrote Washington:

"I take the liberty to suggest, that two of the smaller vessels of the naval force, now on the coast, be continued, with a rendezvous at Indian Key, to give aid and assistance to wrecked vessels, and also to guard against illicit traffic with the Indians from Cuba, which has doubtless been carried to a very great extent during this contest. For this purpose they will need but slight crews and appointments. The stations selected are com-

paratively healthy, and furnished with sufficient covering, not requiring the outlay of one dollar beyond expenditure on ordinary service."[291]

On June 17, 1842 Colonel Worth wrote to Lieutenant McLaughlin of his suggestion to the War Department that two small vessels be left in Florida.[292]

Colonel Worth, at Cedar Keys, on June 20, 1842 wrote the Adjutant General of the Army:

"I trust I may be permitted on this occasion to express my respectful and grateful sense of the cordial and efficient co-operation received, on all occasions and under all circumstances, from Captain McLaughlin, and the gallant and accomplished officers, who have ever aimed at rivalling the zeal and devotion of their admirable commander; and I feel assured the general-in-chief will learn with gratification that the utmost cordiality and confidence has prevailed between both branches of a common service, whether united on the land or on the water. I am most happy, on the occasion, to express my personal obligations."[293]

On June 21, 1842 Colonel Worth wrote Lieutenant McLaughlin:

"On parting with your young and accomplished com-

rades, I beg you to convey and make acceptable to them, the high professional and personal respect I have the honor to entertain for each. The commendation of an old soldier can do no harm, and it is for me only to regret the humbleness which gives no warrant for a more decided expression of all that is due to their gallant and uncalculating devotion in a service as painful as thankless. May God protect, and your country promote you, is the sincere prayer of" most truly your friend, W. J. Worth.[294]

Secretary of the Navy A. P. Upshur, on June 20, 1842, wrote Lieutenant McLaughlin:

"The Secretary of War and the Major General Commanding in Chief of the Army, concur in the opinion that the public Service no longer requires the presence of the force under your command on the coast of Florida. You will therefore turn over the Schooner Phoenix to the Quartermaster of the Army at Tampa Bay, discharge the hired vessels if you have any and return to Norfolk with the residue of your command as soon as practicable."[295]

"The government having determined upon a pacific policy for the restoration of amicable relations with the Indians of Florida," wrote Lieutenant McLaughlin, on the Flirt at Indian Key, to Lieutenant Henry, U.S.

Navy on July 8, 1842, "all offensive operations against them will cease, and the vessels of the Florida Squadron, except the Wave and the Phoenix, will be immediately withdrawn from the territory." These two vessels were left under command of Lieutenant Henry. "Interpreters will be furnished you for the purpose of communicating with the Indians, and you will endeavor, by every means, to open an intercourse with them, when you will seek to impress upon them, that it is the president's wish, that hereafter the red and white man shall live in Friendship in Florida, and cultivate together the arts of peace; that he desires to GIVE TO THE RED MAN, a portion of the territory TO LIVE IN FOREVER, and to permit him to trade with the whites after his own manner, and for any thing he may require, whether it be for provisions, for powder, or for clothing; that Colonel Worth is empowered to make all these arrangements for them, and awaits their coming to him at Tampa Bay or Cedar Key, to have a talk with him and determine together what portion of the territory shall be their home."[296]

The Flirt carried Lieutenants Sloan and Tansill and 71 Marines north from Indian Key, Florida in July, 1842.[297]

A circular of Military Department No. 9, dated at Cedar Key on June 13, 1842 read: "On or before the conclusion of the Florida service, it is proposed to gather the remains: 1st, of the officers, and soldiers who fell with Major Dade; 2d, of other officers who may have been killed in battle, or died of this service."[298]

Order No. 25, July 25, 1842 set forth the details concerning the interring at St. Augustine on August 15, 1842 of all those who fell in battle or died on service in Florida. On the day appointed the remains in seven wagons, each covered with an American Flag and drawn by "five elegant mules" were carried to their last resting places.

The remains being removed from the wagons amid the firing of minute-guns, the Rev. Mr. Waters, of the Catholic Church, addressed the assembled multitude with great eloquence and beauty; the services of the Episcopal Church were read by John Beard, Esq., and a concluding prayer offered by the Rev. Henry Axtell.

The remains were then placed in vaults, prepared for their reception; and after a salute of musketry, the troops retired and were marched into quarters.

The Masonic fraternity proceeded from the tombs to the Presbyterian Church, where a monody on the dead was pronounced by D. W. Whitehurst, Esq. Half-hour guns were fired until sunset, closing the solemnity of the day.[299]

Late in 1843 a very neat and plain marble monument was erected over the spot where the dead of the Florida War were buried at St. Augustine.[300] On the west side of the monument was this inscription: "This conflict in which so many gallant men perished in battle and by disease, commenced on the 25th of December, 1835, and terminated on the 14th of August, 1842."[301]

NOTES

CHAPTER VI, Vol. II.

---

1. Captain Thomas A. Linton was in command from at least Jan. 1, 1835 to Dec. 30, 1836, the muster roll stating he "relinquished command 30th inst. and left the station"; 2d Lt. George F. Lindsay was attached Jan. 1, 1835 to April 15, 1835; 2d Lt. Lafayette Searcy joined Jan. 9, 1836 as commanding officer and left on leave of absence about Feb., 1839 and was detached July 2, 1839; Orderly Sergeant John R. Reigert signed the March, 1838 muster roll, in this period; Orderly Sergeant Henry Lorimer signed the Jan., 1839 muster roll; 2d Lt. Robert C. Caldwell, who had joined Oct. 23, 1838, succeeded Searcy as commanding officer; 2d Lt. John Young was shown as sick and absent with leave from Sept., 1838 to Feb. 9, 1839; 1st Lt. Nathaniel S. Waldron relieved Caldwell on March 12, 1839 and commanded until June 24, 1839 when 1st Lt. Robert C. Caldwell succeeded him; 1st Lt. Job G. Williams commanded from Nov. 18, 1839 to April 23, 1841; 1st Lt. Archibald H. Gillespie from April 24 to Aug. 4, 1841; Lt. Gillespie (junior to Lt. Williams) continued on duty at Pensacola until Nov., 1842; 1st Lt. Job G. Williams Aug. 5, 1841 to May 31, 1842; 1st Lt. Gillespie from June 1, to Nov., 1842; and 1st Lt. Robert C. Caldwell from Nov. 16, 1842 until later than Dec. 31, 1842. (Muster Rolls and Monthly Details of Officers in M. C. Arch.) During the year 1835 the Pensacola Barracks was called "Tartar Point" on the muster rolls.

2. Message of President Jackson transmitting treaty on Dec. 24, 1833 in Richardson, III, 37; "arrangements are in progress for the removal of the Creeks and will soon be for the removal of the Seminoles." (Pres. Jackson's An. Mess., 1 Dec., 1834 in Richardson, III, 113); "The plan of removing the aboriginal people who yet remain within the settled portions of the United States to the country west of the Mississippi River approaches its consummation," and "it

2. Continued.
seems now to be an established fact that they cannot live in contact with a civilized community and prosper." (Pres. Jackson's An. Mess., 7 Dec. 1835 in Richardson, III, 171); "The execution of the Treaty of Payne's Landing, signed in 1832, but not ratified until 1834, was postponed at the solicitation of the Indians until 1836, when they again renewed their agreement to remove peaceably to their new homes in the West." (Pres. Van Buren's An. Mess., 5 Dec. 1840 in Richardson, III, 616); (Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408); For interesting story on a "Seminole Indian Village" in Florida today see Washington Star, 18 Jan. 1925. Woodburne Potter (a Late Staff Officer) The War in Florida, 30; M. M. Cohen, Notices of Florida and the Campaigns, 52-63; "The case of the Seminoles constitutes at present the only exception to the successful efforts of the Government to remove the Indians to the homes assigned them west of the Mississippi." (Pres. Van Buren's 2d An. Mess., 3 Dec. 1838 in Richardson, III, 501-502)

3. Sec. Navy Mahlon Dickerson to Commodore Alexander J. Dallas, 29 Oct. 1835, Navy Arch.; The foregoing letter in Navy Arch. has been copied together with many other letters and documents in a book called the Florida Indian War Book, Dec. 28, 1835 - Aug. 14, 1842, located in Navy Arch.

4. Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408; Cohen, Notices of Florida, 66-69; "Osceola, or Oceola," signified "the Rising Sun," (Cohen, Notices of Florida, 234-235) was a "quarter-blood or one-fourth white;" "Asseschcholar, Black Drink" ("The History of the Florida War" by John T. Sprague, 101)

5. Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408.

6. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 162; Am. St. Pap. VI, 57.

7. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 163; Pres. Van Buren's An. Mess., 5 Dec. 1840 in Richardson, III, 617; Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408; Sprague's Florida War, 162; Potter, War in Florida, 102-109; Seminole War by a Lieutenant, 35-39; Cohen, Notices of Florida, 69-78.

8. Capt. Let. Bk., Jan. 1836, No. 33, Navy Arch.; "as early as the 14th of December, an express had been sent to Pensacola and Mobile from St. Augustine for some small armed vessels to cooperate with the land forces and intercept the passage of the Indians in canoes through the rivers and inland channels." (Seminole War by a Lieutenant, 64)

9. Capt. Let. Bk., Jan. 1836, No. 33, Navy Arch.

10. M. C. Muster Rolls of August, 1836; "On the 16th (January), the Frigate Constellation and a Sloop of War arrived in the waters of Key West."(Seminole War by a Lieutenant, 65)

11. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 163-164; Am. St. Pap. VI, 817; Seminole War by a Lieutenant, 42; Cohen, Notices of Florida, 82-86.

12. Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408; Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 163-166; Pres. Van Buren's An. Mess. 5 Dec. 1840 in Richardson, III, 617; Potter, War in Florida, 130-131; Sprague's Florida War, 107; Cohen, Notices of Florida, 97; Potter, War in Florida, 166; "General Scott was then ordered to Columbus, Georgia, to conduct the operations in that quarter against the Creeks. The Campaign was called a failure." (Sprague's Florida War, 114); General Gaines "found

12. Continued.
his wishes had been anticipated: Commodore Dallas and Bolton, and Captain Webb, having already directed their attention towards Tampa Bay and other inlets of Florida; whither they had ordered Marines and munitions of war." (Captain E. A. Hitchcock, U.S.A. at Fort Drane to Captain Francis A. Lyon, M.C. in Washington City, 11 March 1836 in Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 376).

13. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 165; Cohen, Notices of Florida, 185; Florida Hist. Soc. Qtrly., April, 1931, 244.

14. Navy Arch.; Jas. Janrier, Corpl. Jas. Harlin, Jno. Richardson, John Moran, Jas. Smith, and Jno. Gilpin, privates.

15. Navy Arch.

16. Navy Arch.

17. Navy Arch.

18. Capt. Let. Bk., Jan. 1836, No. 93, Navy Arch.

19. M. C. Arch.; "Castle Marco, or St. Marks, now called Fort Marion, at St. Augustine, East Florida, is the oldest fort in the United States, and is in a remarkable state of preservation. Its gray moss-

19. Continued.
grown walls, turrets, and battlements, together with the Catholic Chapel inside, give to the work a high degree of romance and interest." (Sprague's Florida War, 337); "The old fort of St. Mark, now called Fort Marion, - a foolish change of name - is a noble work, frowning over the Matanzas, which flows between St. Augustine and the island of Anastasia; and it is worth making a long journey to see. No record remains of its original construction; but it is supposed to have been erected about a hundred and fifty years since, (It is much more ancient.) and the shell rock of which it is built is dark with time." (Fairbanks, Hist. St. Augustine, 194)

20. Navy Arch.

21. Navy Arch.

22. Captain F. S. Belton, U.S.A. to Commodore Dallas, 1 Feb. 1836, Navy Arch.

23. Sec. Navy Dickerson to Dallas, 30 Jan. 1836, Navy Arch.

24. Captains Letters in Navy Arch.

25. Sec. Navy Dickerson to Dallas, 2 Feb. 1836, Navy Arch.

26. Navy Arch.

27. Navy Arch.; Officers of Ships of War No. 22, pp. 404, 405; "The Guard for the Concord was ordered to be in readiness to be sent on board on the 20th January and was no doubt ready to join the Ship on that day. Commo. Crane has only to call on Lt. Colo. Watson and it will be furnished at any time he may wish it. (Henderson to Dickerson, 17 Feb. 1836, M. C. Arch.)

28. Capt. Let. Bk., Feb. 1836, Navy Arch.

29. Webb to Twiggs, 10 Feb. 1836, Capt. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.

30. Gaines to Webb, 10 Feb. 1836, Capt. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.

31. Gaines to Webb, 11 Feb. 1836, Capt. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.

32. Captains Letters in Navy Arch.; on 27 Feb. 1836 Commodore Dallas forwarded to Secretary Dickerson from Pensacola Bay a report of Master Commandant Thomas T. Webb, of the Vandalia and of his correspondence with General Gaines; Navy Arch.

33. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 166; Cohen, Notices of Florida, 98-105; Potter, War in Florida, 136-166; For operation prior to May, 1836 See Potter, War in Florida.

34. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 166; Am. St. Pap. VII, 844; Read Sprague's Florida War, 117-157 for General Scott's statements on this subject before a court of inquiry convened by President Jackson at Frederick, Maryland.

35. Dallas to Dickerson, 14 Feb. 1836, Capt. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.; Bolton to Dickerson, 13 Feb. 1836, Capt. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.; Sergeant Joseph Scanlan was in charge of the Marines of the Warren. (M. C. Muster Rolls, Jan. 1836); Navy Arch.

36. Navy Arch.

37. Navy Arch.; Vandalia Log in Navy Arch.

38. Navy Arch.

39. Navy Arch.

40. Navy Arch.

41. Navy Arch.; The Marines were Sergeant Thomas Bean, Privates George Webster and William P. Jones; Vandalia Log, Navy Arch.; Potter in War in Florida, 180 refers to "a small party of Marines from the United States vessels" serving with Colonel Smith in February, 1836.

42. Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 355-358.

43. Navy Arch.

44. Commander Mervine P. Mix to Dallas, 30 April 1836, Navy Arch.

45.

46. Navy Arch.

47. Navy Arch.

48. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 169; Am. St. Pap., VII, 311.

49. Navy Arch.

50. A former Marine Officer, born at Charleston, S. C. during Amer. Rev., appointed Second Lieutenant of Marines on Nov. 10, 1799, resigned as a Captain on April 1, 1811, joined Army and died at Marseilles, France in 1842. See Note 66 of Chap. XVIII, Vol. I, this history for details of Gen. Fenwick's career.

51. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 169.

52. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 169-170; Am. St. Pap. VII, 321, 326.

53. Sec. Navy Dickerson to Dallas, 25 May 1836, Navy Arch.; Dallas to Sec. Navy Dickerson, 14 June 1836, Navy Arch.; "The presence of the Marine of the Squadron is still considered indispensable by the Commanding Officer at Fort Brooke, two companies having recently left that post for St. Marks." (Dallas to Sec. Navy Dickerson, 14 June, 1836, Navy Arch.) At Tampa Bay on May 28, 1836 M. P. Mix, commanding the U.S.S. Concord, wrote Major Henry Wilson, commanding Fort Brooke: "I shall feel particularly obliged if you will send me a written reply to my letter of the 26th instant. Your reasons are, no doubt, fully sufficient for detaining the Marines, but as they are unknown to me, and as the Commander in Chief of the Naval Forces requires their services, you will see the propriety of my request, that I may communicate a copy to him." (Navy Arch.) Major Wilson replied to Mix on May 30 as follows: "I presume that you have heretofore been advised of the authority by which the Marines under Lieutenant Waldron, are detained at this Post. I am directed to retain them here until the force shall be augmented by recruits or otherwise, and I cannot now admit the right of the Commander in Chief of the Naval Forces of the United States in the West Indies to transfer to you the discretionary power of removal. The Marine force is still considered by me as a very essential part of this command, and I should not feel authorized to remove them without further instructions than those now in my possession." (Navy Arch.)

54. "The Colonel of the Marines having tendered the services of his Corps for duty in the field, the President accordingly has been pleased to direct that all the disposable Marines be withdrawn from their respective stations, leaving at each a Sergeant's

54. Continued.
guard, and that the Corps, under the direction of the Commandant be organized and forthwith proceed in two detachments from the New York and Norfolk stations, via: Charleston and Augusta for Fort Mitchell, and there report to the Commanding General for active duty with the Army in the Field." (General Order No. 33 Adjutant General's Office, 21 May 1836, in U.S.M.C. Order Book, 17 Oct. 1832 to 13 Sept. 1851, 363-364) see also letters dated 23 May 1836 of Henderson to Capt. Levi Twiggs at Norfolk, Lt. Col. Wm. H. Freeman at Boston and Lt. Col. John Marshall Gamble at New York, all in M. C. Arch.

55. Howle's Memo. M. C. Arch.; Colonel Henderson received orders on May 21, 1836, from Secretary of the Navy Dickerson to report in person to Secretary of War Lewis Cass with the disposable force of the Marine Corps to serve with the Army in the campaign against the Creek Indians. (Adjutant General Jones to Henderson, 25 May, 1836, M. C. Arch.)

56. M. C. Arch.

57. "I left Headquarters on the 1st June 1836 on temporary duty with the Army and returned on the 20th June 1837. While thus absent I had under my Command nearly half the strength of the Corps. I would ask your attention to the fact that I am by law the Commandant of the Corps and therefore I do not think that any allowance made to me as its Commandant can be taken away while any considerable portion of it was under my personal Command." (Henderson to Sec. Navy, 16 July 1839, M. C. Arch.); "It is confidently hoped that the claims of this corps will receive the early attention which their necessities require, and to which they are entitled by their merits - merits

57. Continued.
which are much strengthened by their patriotic conduct, in volunteering their services in a campaign against the Creek Indians, in which they have distinguished themselves by their zeal and perseverance in the duties assigned to them. As, however, they have been attached to the Army, while on this campaign, their merits will more appropriately receive the notice of the War, than of the Navy Department." (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1836, 448)

58. M. C. Arch.; On May 23, 1836 Col. Henderson wrote C. O. Mar. Bks., Norfolk, Boston, Portsmouth, N.H., New York, Philadelphia, etc., that "the President of the United States has ordered that all the Marines at the different stations be withdrawn except a Sergeant's Guard, to consist of one Sergeant, one Corporal and twelve Privates" etc. A Corporal's guard of one Corporal and six Privates were left on the receiving ships. (M. C. Arch.); On May 23, 1836 Col. Henderson ordered "George B. McKnight, M.D., U.S. Navy, Present," to "proceed to Baltimore and contract with Mr. Ferguson to transport a detachment of Marines, say about 300, from Norfolk to Charleston in the Charleston steam Packet." (M. C. Arch.) On May 26, 1836 Col. Henderson wrote Second Lieut. William Lang at New York that "the whole disposable force of the Corps is put under my command for field duty." (M. C. Arch.); On May 27, 1836 Col. Henderson wrote Second Lieut. John T. Sprague that "you are detailed to perform the duties of Commissary of Subsistence to the Marines under my command during the campaign against the Creek Indians." (M. C. Arch.) On May 30 Col. Henderson informed General George Gibson, Commissary of Subsistence, U. S. Army that he had so detailed Lt. Sprague. (M. C. Arch.); "You are hereby appointed an Assistant Quartermaster to the Marines under my command during the campaign against the Creek Indians." (Henderson to Lt. Crabb, 31 May 1836, M. C. Arch.) "You are hereby appointed Regimental Adjutant during the expedition against the Creek Indians, and as such you will report yourself to the Adjutant

58. Continued.
and Inspector for such duties in his office as he may from time to time assign to you."
(Henderson to Lt. Tyler, 31 May 1836, M. C. Arch.)

59. M. C. Arch.

60. Henderson to Wainwright, 1 June 1836, M. C. Arch.

61. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

62. M. C. Muster Rolls.

63. "On the first of June 1836, I joined a body of Marines from the respective posts, and proceeded to the Creek Nation, and encamped on the Chattahoochee River, in Alabama. Here with the command of the 1st Battalion of Marines, I scoured the country in pursuit of the enemy and succeeded in capturing a party of some twenty and I sent them into Fort Mitchell where I again scoured the neighborhood & noticed the inhabitants made Bridges, repaired the road and furnished escorts for the protection of the Mail; prior to my leaving that post I interred the bodies of those who were slain by the Indians in May 1836."
(Major Samuel Miller to Sec. Navy David Henshaw, 24 Dec. 1843, M. C. Let. Sup., Navy Arch.)

64. Nat. Intell., 10 June 1836; "A detachment of about 150 men from Washington, and 60 from Philadelphia, were landed at Fortress Monroe, yesterday morning, from the steamboats Columbia and Pocahontas. Captain Twigg's command, at the Navy Yard, (Gosport)

64. Continued.
consisting of about 81, embarked in the steam packet Columbia, yesterday afternoon, and, joined by those at Fortress Monroe, would proceed immediately for Charleston. The officers and men were all in fine spirits." (Nat. Intell, 10 June 1836 quoting the Norfolk Beacon of 3 June 1836.)

65. Nat. Intell., 10 June 1836.

66. Howle's Memo M. C. Arch.; The detachment of Marines, under the command of Colonel Henderson, which so promptly and handsomely volunteered to go against the Creek Indians, will, we understand, leave here this morning in the Columbia, for Norfolk, where they will take passage to Charleston, South Carolina, on their route to the scene of savage warfare. This is another striking evidence of the great value of this arm of the national defence; it has shown itself as prompt to defend its country on the land as on the water, the element upon which it was designed, originally, exclusively to act. Upon several occasions during the late war with England, detachments from this brave and highly disciplined corps covered themselves with unfading laurels by their conduct while serving on land; and, in every instance of conflict on the water, its bravery and efficiency were tested by the official reports of the actions in which it bore a part. In the present emergency it did not wait even an intimation that its services would be acceptable, but promptly came forth, through its commanding officer, in the first hour of danger, and voluntarily offered to leave their comfortable quarters, and within one week from the offer, we see a strong and well-appointed detachment of fine looking men bidding farewell to families and friends, and taking up the line of march to seek a savage and treacherous foe, in a distant land and in an inhospitable climate, to stay the ravages of war, and to protect the innocent, the helpless, and the unoffending. They will carry

66. Continued.
with them the best and warmest wishes of all that their success may be commensurate with their bravery and zeal. We sincerely hope this valuable corps may hereafter find that favor in the eyes of the constituted authorities of the nation, to which we think it so justly entitled. (Nat. Intell., 1 June 1836, 3) See M. C. Muster Rolls, 30 June 1836 for strength.

67. M. C. Arch.

68. Henderson to Dickerson, 9 June 1836.

69. Navy Arch.; M. C. Arch.

70. A. & N. Chron., 14 July 1836 quoting Columbus Sentinel of 1 July 1836; General Scott wrote General Jesup that the regulars were advancing from Augusta on June 10, 1836, and that all but a small detachment of Marines had reached that place. Of the regulars, one company had reached Columbus on June 13. "Colonel Henderson's first detachment of U.S. Marines followed at intervals of two, three and five days." (Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, pp. 290, 239)

71. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, pp. 290, 239.

72. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, pp. 290, 239.

73. A. & N. Chron., 14 July 1836, Vol. III, quoting Columbus Sentinel 1 July 1836. "Upon the breaking out of hostilities in Georgia, at a moment when the enemy were ravaging the country, and the disposable force of the regular Army was inadequate to the emergency, Colonel Henderson volunteered his services, together with that portion of the Corps stationed at the different Navy Yards. In this he was seconded most cheerfully by the officers under his command. In June, 1836, they reached Columbus, Ga., and immediately took the field; from thence to Florida, where they participated in the arduous campaigns under General Jesup, and received from him the highest commendations." (Sprague's Florida War, 162)

74. Henderson to Brig. Gen. R. Jones, Adj. Gen., U.S. Army, 24 Dec. 1836, M. C. Arch.; see also 1st Lt. G. F. Lindsay to Henderson 24 Dec. 1836, M. C. Arch.

75. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

76. "Under an order from the President of the United States, I am directed to withdraw all the force from the different stations of the Marine Corps, with the exception of a Sergt's. guard to consist of 1 sergt. 1 Corpl. & 12 privates and those are to be selected from the men who are unable to perform field duty. I have accordingly to direct that you take charge of such force as shall report to you from Portsmouth, and with that and all the other officers and men from your post, you will proceed with all possible dispatch to New York. Lt. McNeill if he is unable to perform field duty can remain in charge of the Sergt's. guard. On your arrival in New York you will receive from Lt. Col. Gamble such troops as he shall be directed to turn over to you. As soon as practicable thereafter you will procure for them the most expeditious

76. Continued.
conveyance that you possibly can for Charleston, South Caroline. From thence you will proceed by the rail road to Augusta in Georgia where you will find all the necessary arrangements made for the transportation of the force under your charge to Fort Mitchell in Alabama. If you do not find me there you will report to Major Genl. Jesup or the military officer in command at that post." (Henderson to Freeman, at Boston, 23 May 1836, M. C. Arch.) Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

77. Collum, Hist. U.S.M.C., 71.

78. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

79. Henderson to Dickerson, 1 July 1836, M. C. Arch.; "The particular duty for which the Corps volunteered its Services in the field, was the Campaign against the Creek Indians in Alabama. Its first movement from its Stations was on the 1st June, 1836, and on the 25th of that month I crossed the Chattahoochee, and took a position in the hostile country. That campaign closed by the removal of the Creek Indians in less than three months from that date. This however did not close the service of the force under my orders. It was directed to proceed to Florida, and I served with it one campaign in that Territory." (Henderson to Sec. Navy J. K. Paulding, 20 July 1838, M. C. Arch.)

80. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 245, p. 589.

81. Scott at Fort Mitchell to Adjt. Gen. Jones, 2 July 1836 in Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 481.

82. Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 485.

83. A. & N. Chron., 14 July 1836 quoting Columbus Sentimel of 1 July 1836.

84. "Agreeably to orders from Genl. Jesup I then proceeded with my command to Stenoat (?) Country in Georgia, for similar purposes, and from thence to the large part of Indians as Cassuta (?) in Alabama, where I watched the large party preparing to imigrate to the West. From this post to the West of Columbus, in Georgia, I scoured the Swamps and Secret places of the hostile Creeks." (Major Samuel Miller to Sec. Navy David Henshaw, 24 Dec. 1843, M. C. Let. Sup., Navy Arch.)

85. Scott to Adjt. Gen. Jones 2 and 4 July, 1836 and Scott to Brig. Gen. Wool, 4 July, 1836 in Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq.; Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 245, p. 589.

86. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 243, p. 586.

87. Scott to Wool, 4 July 1836 in Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 491-492; Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 245, pp. 594-595.

88. Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 491; Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, p. 594; The number of Marines employed in the Creek Campaign were thirty-two officers and 398 men, a total of 430. (Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 171).

89. Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 490; Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 251, p. 593.

90. On July 7, 1836 Gen. Scott relinquished command to Gen. Jesup. (Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 171.)

91. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 259, pp. 598-599.

92. Logbook of Concord.

93. Scott to Dallas, 1 July 1836, Navy Arch.

94. Dallas to Sec. Navy Dickerson, 3 July 1836, Navy Arch.

95. Logbook of Concord.

96. Logbook of Concord.

97. Dallas to Acting Sec. of Navy John Boyle, 19 Aug. 1836. Cape Florida lighthouse was built in 1825-26 by the Federal Government. It was not of Spanish origin, although its somewhat dilapidated appearance has no doubt given rise to the belief that it dates back to the days of Spanish occupation. The tower was partly destroyed by Indians in July, 1836. It was not again relighted until the old tower was demolished and a new tower built in 1846-47. In 1861 the lighting apparatus was

97. Continued.
destroyed by a band of lawless persons, and the light was not relighted until April, 1866. The light was finally discontinued in June, 1878, when Fowey Rocks Light was first exhibited.

98. Mix to Dallas, 5 Aug. 1836; Dallas to Acting Sec. Navy John Boyle, 7 Aug. 1836; Constellation Logbook, 6 Aug. 1836; Navy Arch.

99. Mix to Dallas, 23 July 1836.

100. Logbook of Grampus.

101. Upton Mil. Pol., U.S., 171; In June of 1836 Governor Call took command of the forces in Florida and late in that year he was relieved in command by Major General Thomas S. Jesup. (Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408); "Governor Call was subsequently appointed to conduct a summer campaign, and at the close of it was replaced by General Jesup." (Pres. Van Buren's An. Mess., 5 Dec. 1840 in Richardson, III, 617)

102. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

103. Scott-Gaines Ct. Inq., 498; Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 261, pp. 600-601.

104. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

105. A. & N. Chron., 25 Aug. 1836 quoting the Norfolk Beacon; In a letter dated Oct. 7, 1837 to Secretary of War J. R. Poinsett, Colonel Henderson requested information about whether he was not entitled to double rations while in command at Tallassee, Florida. "A battalion of Artillery and one of Infantry and five companies of the Marine Corps were placed under my command to attend to the important duty of superintending the emigration of the large body of Indians in that vicinity under their principal Chief." (M. C. Arch.)

106. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 262, p. 601; this letter explained erroneous reports in the Richmond Enquirer of July 15, 1836 (publish-

106. Continued.
ing a report of Gen. Scott dated at Fort Mitchell July 2) that 250 Indians had surrendered. Colonel Henderson in a report dated June 28 to General Scott stated that he had been informed of the surrender. "A day or two later, I ascertained that no such event had taken place", wrote Colonel Henderson, "and meeting General Scott on board of a steamboat passing up the Chattahoochee, I told him in what manner I was led into the error."

107. Sprague's Florida War, 161.

108. Howle's Casualty List, M. C. Arch.; Sgt. Joseph Larned, formerly of Co. D, died at Washington on June 21, 1836 and Wainwright wrote to the Army asking what to do for he was still attached to the Army. (Wainwright to Jones, 24 June 1836, M. C. Arch.)

109. Nat. Intell., 20 Oct. 1836; Col. Henderson wrote Sec. of War J.R. Poinsett on Oct. 7, 1837 that he "was stationed at Fort Brooke in Florida from the 28th of October 1836 to the 3d of January 1837 in command of that Post." (M. C. Arch.)

110. An. Rep. Sec. War, 1837.

111. M. C. Arch.; see also Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch. May and June, 1837; For Sprague's detail see Henderson to Sprague, 27 May 1836 and Henderson to Gen. George Gibson, Commissary of Subsistence, U.S. Army, M. C. Arch.

112.

113. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

114. A General Order of the Army of the South dated October 28, 1836 at Fort Drane gave certain appointments in the "Regiment of Creek Volunteers" including Captain Andrew Ross, of the Marines, appointed September 1, 1836. (Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, p. 184) An address by Charles P. Summerall published in Florida Hist. Soc. Qtrly., for April, 1931, 245, states Captain Ross, and others "behaved with great bravery" and that Ross was wounded but gives wrong date.

115. A. & N. Chron., 5 Jan. 1837, 8; See Revere's Keel and Saddle, 2-3 for death of Moniac, a Creek Indian educated at West Point.

116. Sprague's Florida War, 163-166; Howle's Casualty List, M. C. Arch.; "It is our melancholy duty to state that this gallant officer who was wounded on the 21st ult. while leading his men over a creek in the Wahoo Swamp, under a heavy fire of the enemy, is no more. He reached Fort Heileman on the 2d inst., and died on the 10th. Every kindness was extended to him and his Surgeon writes that he bore his sufferings with heroic fortitude. He was to have been buried on the 11th with the honors of war. We truly sympathise with the wife of his bosom, and young children, who reside in our borough, in this hour of their trial. Norfolk Beacon." (A. & N. Chron., 29 Dec. 1836, 415); "As a tribute of respect to the Memory of Lieut. Andrew Ross, late of the Corps of Marines, who died at Fort Heileman, Fla. on the 11th inst. of a Wound received on the 21st of Novr. last, in the battle between the Whites and the Indians, at the Whahoo Swamp, the Officers of the Corps are directed to wear Crape on the left arm and Sword-hilt for one month from the receipt of this order." (Orders of Headquarter, 24 Dec. 1836, M. C. Arch.) In November of 1836 Governor Call defeated the Seminoles on the Withlacoochee River. (Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408)

117. An. Rep. War Dept., 1837; Sprague's Florida War, 166.

118. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

119. Sprague's Florida War, 103-104.

120. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

121. Richardson's Mess. and Pap., III, 253-254; "The war with the Seminoles during the summer was on our part chiefly confined to the protection of our frontier settlements from the incursions of the enemy, and, as a necessary and important means for the accomplishment of that end, to the maintenance of the posts previously established. In the course of this duty several actions took place, in which the bravery and discipline of both officers and men were conspicuously displayed, and which I have deemed it proper to notice in respect to the

121. Continued.
former by the granting of brevet rank for gallant services in the field. But as the force of the Indians was not so far weakened by these partial successes as to lead them to submit, and as their savage inroads were frequently repeated, early measures were taken for placing at the disposal of Governor Call, who as commander in chief of the Territorial militia had been temporarily invested with the command, an ample force for the purpose of resuming offensive operations in the most efficient manner so soon as the season should permit. Major-General Jesup was also directed, on the conclusion of his duties in the Creek country, to repair to Florida and assume the command. The result of the first movement made by the forces under the direction of Governor Call in October last, as detailed in the accompanying papers, excited much surprise and disappointment. A full explanation has been required of the causes which led to the failure of that movement, but has not yet been received. In the meantime, as it was feared that the health of Governor Call, who was understood to have suffered much from sickness, might not be adequate to the crisis, and as Major General Jesup was known to have reached Florida, that officer was directed to assume the command, and to prosecute all needful operations with the utmost promptitude and vigor. From the force at his disposal and the dispositions he has made and is instructed to make, and from the very efficient measures which it is since ascertained have been taken by Governor Call, there is reason to hope that they will soon be enabled to reduce the enemy to subjection. In the meantime, as you will perceive from the report of the Secretary, there is urgent necessity for further appropriations to suppress these hostilities. Happily for the interests of humanity, the hostilities with the Creeks were brought to a close soon after your adjournment, without that effusion of blood which at one time was apprehended as inevitable. The unconditional submission of the hostile party was followed by their speedy removal to the country assigned them west of the Mississippi. The inquiry as to alleged frauds in the purchase of the reservations of these Indians and the causes of their hostilities, requested by the resolution of the House of Representatives of the 1st of July last to be made by the President, is now going on through the agency of commissioners appointed for that purpose. Their report may be ex-

121. Continued.
pected during your present session. The difficulties apprehended in the Cherokee country have been prevented, and the peace and safety of that region and its vicinity effectually secured, by the timely measures taken by the War Department and still continued." (Richardson's Mess. and Pap., III, 253-254)

122. M. C. Arch.

123. Jones to Hall, 10 Dec. 1836, M. C. Arch.; Yet on August 7, 1836 Lt. Col. Wainwright at Washington placed Lt. Langdon C. Carter on leave of absence due to ill-health. (Wainwright to Carter, 7 Aug. 1836, M. C. Arch.)

124. M. C. Arch.

125. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, p. 56.

126. Dallas to Dickerson, 2 Oct. 1836, Navy Arch.

127. Logbook of Vandalia; A. & N. Chron., 10 Nov. 1836, 301, and 11 May 1837, 298; Dr. E. T. Leitner is said to have been killed and scalped by Indians.

128. Powell to Crabb, 8 Dec. 1836, A. & N. Chron.

129. Logbook of Vandalia; Dallas to Dickerson, 23 Dec. 1836, Navy Arch. in which Dallas reported that the expedition of Lt. Powell had not returned; that the cutter Washington, with a part of the Marines (of Powell's expedition) aboard, returned to Charlotte Harbor; that the cutter Dexter arrived at Tampa Bay on December 23, 1836 with Lieut. Waldron and a part of the Marines employed in Powell's expedition and that the remainder were expected to arrive that day at Tampa Bay on the cutter Washington. An extract from the log of the Sloop of War St. Louis for December 24, 1836 reads: "Lieut. Bell and Midn. Hoban and Morgan and the following men, viz: John Montgomery (O. Sergt) Wm. F. Upham (Sergt.) Jos. W. Lyon (Corp.) John Bunsia (do) Hugh McCarren, Samuel R. Kitchum, Thos. Stewart, Hugh Graham, Geo. Warren, David Morrison, Private Marines, David Dowley (boy) Stephen Fields, Luke Brown, John Allen, Wm. D. Knight, Jesse Clarke, Wm. Jones 3d. John Firehook, Simon Gannet, H. J. Mercier

129. Continued.
Benj. Keen, John Hickock, John Guzowszki, Pat. Moran, Danl. Cummings, Ed. Agnew (Lands.) James Myent, Geo. Hall, Levin Griffin, Thos. Montague, John Desmond, Wm. King, Thomas Weller, Henry Haines, Geo. James, Wm. Tippett, Ed. Perkins, Chas. Maines, (O.S.) Wm. Condy, Thos. Dudley, Andrew Johnson, Robt. Taylor, Eli McBride, Adam Hilner, John Williams 3rd. James Turrell, Simon Croie, Richard Fisher, Daniel Vaughan (Seaman) were transferred to the Concord with the 1st and 4th cutters."

130. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 60; Logbook of Concord, 1 Jan. 1837 gives names of 12 Marines leaving to garrison Fort Clinch.

131. Capt. Let. Bk., Jan. 1837, No. 101, Navy Arch.; 1st Lt. Nathaniel S. Waldron of the Constellation was "at Fort Brooke, E.F. since January 1837 to 18 May 1837" (Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.); The Steamer Southron, purchased by the Army, was renamed the Major Dade and under command of Lieut. Howison manned in June of 1836 by forty-five or fifty men from the Constellation at Pensacola. (Dallas to Dickerson, 26 June 1836, Navy Arch.); "Tampa Fla. Jan. 4, 1837." "Lieut. Waldron, of the Marines, left a few days since, in the steamer for the Withlacoochee, to attack an Indian town situated on one of its mouths, called Pearl River. He has a fine set of men who will make a good fight." (A. & N. Chron., 2 Feb. 1837); 2d Lt. Frederick B. McNeill of the sloop Natchez served at Fort Brooke from Jan., 1837 to at least May, 1837. (Monthly Det. Off., May 1837, M. C. Arch.) The log of the Concord for Dec. 29, 1836 contains the following note: "Sent the Marines on board the Steamer Major Dade on an expedition; also the barge, 4th cutter and Fairy."

132. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.

133. Extract from Col. Henderson's Journal, Navy Arch., A-8, 13 April 1837.

134. M. C. Let., 1843, No. 70-D, Navy Arch.; "Under a decission of the Navy Dept. double rations are not allowed me, as the Commandant of the Corps, while on duty with the Army. I have therefore to ask of the War Department whether additional rations will not be allowed while in Command at Tallassee, Alabama. A

134. Continued.
Battalion of Artillery and one of Infantry and five Companies of the Marine Corps were placed under my Command to attend to the important duty of superintending the emigration of the large body of Indians in that vicinity under their principal Chief. I was subsequently stationed at Fort Brooke in Florida from the 28th October, 1836, to the 3d Jany. 1837, in Command at that post. On the 7th: Jany. I was placed in Command of the 2nd Brigade of the Army of the South, and continued in that situation until two Departments were created by an order from the Commanding General, dated the 26th April, 1837. One of the Departments was placed under my Command. I left Florida on the 23d May following." (Henderson to Sec. War J. R. Poinsett, Comdt. Let. Bk., U.S.M.C.); "On the 8th Jany. 1837, I was on service with the Southern Army in Florida: while there the Commanding Major General Josup divided that Army into two Brigades, the Command of the First having been given to General Armistead and of the Second to me. The force you will see by a certified copy of the orders, enclosed was at least 'according to my brevet rank,' as it comprised not only the Marine Corps then in the field but Two Regiments of Artillery, one of Infantry, the whole body of Georgia Volunteers and a battalion of Indians. I continued to command this division of the Army from the 8th January 1837 to the 23 of May of the same year when I was detached by orders to report to the Adjutant General of the Army, Brevet General Armistead whose command was similar to that of mine received the pay and allowances of his rank." (Henderson to Sec. Navy A. P. Upshur, M. C. Let., 1843, Navy Arch.); "On the 8th January (1837) I was placed in command of the Second Brigade of the Army of the South and continued in that situation" until April 26, 1837. (Henderson to Sec. of War J. R. Poinsett, 7 Oct. 1837, M. C. Arch.) See also M. C. Gaz., Aug. 1931, 28.

135. Comdt. Henderson to Sec. Navy, 15 March 1848; 2d Lt. Whitney succeeded Captain John Harris in command of Co. B of Horse Marines on March 6, 1837. Lt. Whitney left Tampa Bay on July 30, 1837 under orders to Washington City. He joined Headquarters on August 22, 1837. (Monthly Det. Off., June, July and Aug., 1837, M. C. Arch.)

136. Sprague's Florida War, 162.

137. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 60.

138. Sprague's Florida War, 167; Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 61.

139. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 61-62; Adj. & Insp. F. G. Howle reported that on Jan. 13, 1837 Scout sent out under command of Col. Henderson. On the 14th Jan. Scout sent out under the command of Lt. Col. Freeman. On the 16th Jan. party sent with pack mules to Fort Clinch for forage and provisions. (Howle's Memo., M. C. Arch.)

140. "The devotion which you have on all occasions evinced for the Service, and the energy and promptitude with which you have performed every duty which has devolved on you, merits the highest commendation, and I assure you, Colonel, that I shall always retain the most grateful recollection of your services. The duties with which you are now charged, are more important to the efficiency of this Army than any other on which you could in the present stage of the campaign be employed, and I have the utmost confidence that they will be performed with your accustomed energy and skill. Make the best arrangements for the security of the train and the posts committed to your command." (Maj. Gen. Thomas S. Jesup at "Headquarters Army of the South, Fort King", to Lt. Col. Samuel Miller, M. C. Let. Bk., No. 112, Navy Arch.)

141. Dallas to Dickerson, 19 Jan. 1837, Capt. Let. Navy Arch.

142. Howle's Memo., M. C. Arch.; General Jesup arrived at Fort Armstrong, near Dade's, on Jan. 19. "The Marines and regular troops" arrived there the following day. (Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 63-64)

143. Dallas to Dickerson, 19 Jan. 1837 and 27 Jan. 1837, Capt. Let., Navy Arch.

144. Howle's Casualty List, M. C. Arch.

145. Searcy to Wainwright, 24 Jan. 1837, M. C. Arch.; 2d Lt. Lafayette Searcy commanded the "Marine Barracks, Navy Yard, Near Pensacola," at this time. (Searcy to Wainwright, 23,24 Jan. 1837, M. C. Arch.)

146. Capt. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.

147. An. Rep. Sec. War., 1837; The next day he detached Lt. Col. Caulfield with his mounted battalion of Alabama Volunteers, Captain Harris' Company of (mounted) Marines, and Major Morris' Indian warriors, with his own aid, Lieut. Chambers, to attack Osuchee, commonly called the Chief Cooper, whose rendezvous was then on the borders of Ahapopka Lake. Osuchee was surprised, and, with three of his warriors, killed; nine women and children, and eight negroes taken. The Whites lost one Indian, who was mortally wounded. From the captured it was discovered that the main body of the Seminoles had gone southward. (Drake, Ab. Races of North America, 477-478 and see also Sprague's Florida War, 171); On the 22nd Jan. (1837) two Brigades one under the command of Gen. Armistead the other under the command of Col. Henderson, with the General in Chief (Jesup) left Fort Armstrong for the Ocklawaha Swamp - returned to Fort Armstrong on the 7th Feb. 1837. During this general scout, many large and small detachments were sent out from the main body, on Scouts. (Howle's Memo., M. C. Arch.); On the 23rd Jan. at daylight mounted Scouts of Marines and Alabama volunteers were sent out. At sunrise the main body moved and on the 24th (January, 1837) joined the mounted men, who had killed four Indian warriors, among whom was said to be the famous Chief Cooper and his son, and had also as prisoners sixteen Indian women and children and eight Negroes. (Howle's Memo., M. C. Arch.); Gen. Jesup's report, Feb. 7, 1837 in Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-67; Gen. Jesup, on 21 Jan. 1837, reported to Sec. War B. F. Butler that he would march on Jan. 22, 1837 for Hapapka (near the head of the Ocklawaha) where Jumper, Alligator, and other chiefs are; "the main body of my command was put in motion on the 22nd returning to attack the Indians and Negroes in the strongholds which they were said to occupy on the head waters of the Ocklawaha." (Jesup to Adjt. Gen. 7 Feb. 1837 in Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-67)

148. Henderson to Jesup, 28 Jan. 1837 and 29 March, 1837; Sprague's Florida War, 170-176 setting forth Jesup's report dated 7 Feb. 1837 to the Adjt. Gen.; "The enemy was found on the Hatchee Luskee, in and near the Great

148. Continued.
Cypress Swamp, and promptly and gallantly attacked. * * * Colonel Henderson, leaving one company with the prisoners and horses entered the swamp with the remainder of his command, drove the enemy across the Hatchee Luskee, passed that river under their fire, and drove them into a more dense and difficult swamp, where they dispersed.

The messenger first sent to report to me was killed; a second was more fortunate. The parties detached on other trails were called in, and Lieutenant Colonel Freeman, with a small force of pioneers and artillery, being charged with the defence of the camp, the disposable force of Brigadier General Armistead's brigade, with Major Graham's infantry, and Tustenuggee Hajo's Indian warriors, was moved forward to support Colonel Henderson. When the troops reached the point where the Colonel had entered the swamp, it was ascertained that he was in rapid pursuit of the enemy, and was believed to be fully able to manage the force opposed to him. The Indian scouts at this moment reported a large hostile force about two miles to our right. Major Whiting's battalion was left as a reserve, and the 6th infantry, with Major Graham's company of the 4th, and a small party of Indian warriors was moved to the point indicated. The swamps and hammocks were entered and passed by the troops in perfect order; and the advance, under Major Graham, found a large Indian encampment, with fires burning and provisions cooking - the enemy having fled to the surrounding swamp. As night was approaching, pursuit was impossible; and the troops returned to camp, where they arrived about nine o'clock. Colonel Henderson arrived after ten. (Jesup to Adjt. Gen., 7 Feb. 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-67, and also in Sprague's Florida War, 170-173)

On the 27th, the Indians were discovered on the Hatchee-Lustee, in and about the "Great Cypress Swamp;" and a company of Alabama volunteers, by which 25 Indians and Negroes, and their horses and baggage, were taken. The captured were chiefly women and children. Colonel Henderson pursued the fugitive warriors into a swamp, and across the Hatchee-Lustee River, and thence into a more extemsive swamp, where they could not be pursued without great difficulty, and more men. Meanwhile, a messenger had been sent to the general, but he was killed in the way; and it was not till another

148. Continued.
had been sent, that he was informed how matters were progressing with Colonel Henderson. (Drake, Ab Races of North America, 477-478); "On the 27th January a Scout was sent out under the Command of Colonel Henderson to scour the Hatchee luskee Swamp, where they had an engagement with a party of Indians and Negroes. As soon as General Jesup heard of this he took with him about three Hundred men from the main body and proceeded in search of Colonel Henderson, but arrived too late to participate in the engagement. One of the prisoners, a Negro man taken by Colonel Henderson informed him that there was a large body of Indians and Negroes a short distance from him. A pursuit was immediately ordered and the Scout was continued till after dark when they returned to the encampment where we arrived late at Night. See report of Colonel Henderson to General Jesup, in relation to this action." (Howle's Memo, M.C. Arch.) Colonel Henderson sent a prisoner to Jumper, on the morning of the 28th, endeavoring to get a parley, while he moved on and took a position at Lake Tohopikalega, within a few miles of where it is approached by the Cypress Swamp. Here he took some hundred head of cattle. (Drake, Ab. Races of North America, 477-478; On the 28th "one of the prisoners was sent to the hostiles with an offer of peace. The whole army marched about twelve miles this day and encamped on Lake." (Howle's Memo, M.C.Arch.)) The prisoner sent out to Jumper, returned the next day, bringing favorable talks from Alligator and Abraham; and two days after, January 31st, Abraham visited the general in his camp; immediately after, he returned to the Indians, and on the 3rd February brought along with him Jumper and Alligator, with two sub-chiefs, one a nephew of Micanopy. These chiefs agreed to meet the general at Fort Dade, with other chiefs, on the 18th following. Jumper and Alligator, it is said, are among the last of the descendents of the Yamassees. (Drake, Ab. Races of North America, 477-478). To return to Colonel Henderson. On receipt of his message, General Jesup ordered the disposable force of General Armistead's brigade, Major Graham's infantry, and Tustenugge Hajo's Indian warriors, to move on to his support. They soon captured two Indian women, and several negroes, in a pine wood, over a hundred

148. Continued.
ponies, some plunder, and several fire-arms. The main force of the Indians had fled; but not having much time in advance, were soon overtaken by Major Morris on the border of a considerable creek, 20 or 25 yards wide, in the midst of a swamp. The Indians were in possession of the opposite side, and when the warriors came up, they were fired upon, and a considerable skirmish ensued. The creek was difficult to ford, and the Indians had passed it by two trees felled from the opposite banks. These afforded a sure mark for the Indians' rifles, a very few of which could stand against many; but the whites and their Indian allies, being much the more numerous, were able to extend themselves up and down the stream, by which display the Indians were exposed to a cross fire, and soon began to abandon their position. The order being now given to cross the creek, Captain Morris (Major of the first Indian battalion) was the first to advance on the log, followed by Lieutenant Searle and Chambers, and Captain Harris; Lieutenant Lee swimming over at the same time. These officers led the van throughout this expedition, and are mentioned with high encomiums on their conduct. Having all crossed the creek, the Indians made several stands against them, but were forced to flay after a few fires. They were followed for a mile or two, and then the pursuit was given up; the detachments returning late at night to the camp of the main army. The result of this affair was the capture of 28 negroes, and Indian women and children. How many warriors were killed, no certain information could be given; but some two or three they saw, lying dead, as they marched along. Of the whites, one was killed at the passage of the creek in the swamp, and three wounded; and in the pursuit another was killed. Thus ended the affairs of one day, namely, January 27, 1837. (Drake, Ab. Races of North America, 477-478)

149. Henderson to Jesup, 29 March, 1837; Sprague's Florida War, 82.

150. Jesup to Adjt. Gen., 28 March, 1837; Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 81.

151. Jesup to Adjt. Gen., 7 Feb. 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-68, and also in Sprague's Florida War, 170-173; The Army and Navy Chronicle, November 1, 1838 gave the motto of the Marine Corps as Ubique, per mare per terram and "at Tripoli, at Derne, in Florida, and the Creek Country, at Quallah Battoo, they have given signal proof of their courage and efficiency."

152. G. O. No. 19, 6 March 1843 in Sprague's Florida War, 552-553 and Collum, Hist. U.S.M.C. for brevets; Size Roll, U.S.M.C. for Stevens and Whitcomb.

153. Howle's Casualty List, M. C. Arch.; Size Roll U.S.M.C.; On January 28, 1837, the day after the battle, a prisoner was sent to his people with an offer of peace. He returned on the night of the 29th and brought messages of peace from Alligator and Abraham, two hostile chiefs. On the 3d of February, others came in and entered into arrangements to cause hostilities to be suspended until a conference could be had, for which the 18th of February, 1837, was fixed. (An. Rep. War Dept., 1837); "On the morning of the 28th, a prisoner was sent to Jumper, and the other hostile chiefs, with an offer of peace, on a strict fulfilment by them of the terms of the treaty; and the army moved forward, and occupied a strong position on the Toho-peeka-liga lake, within few miles of the point at which the Cypress swamp approaches it, where several hundred head of cattle were obtained," reported General Jesup. "The prisoners returned on the night of the 29th, with pacific messages from Alligator and Abraham," (Jesup to Adjt. Gen., 7 Feb. 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-67); Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-68; On the 28th of January, "one of the prisoners was sent to the hostiles with an offer of peace. The whole Army marched about twelve miles this day and encamped on Lake." (Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.)

154. Howle's Memo, M. C. Arch.; "Abraham visited me on the 31st. He returned, and brought Jumper and Alligator, with two sub-chiefs (one a nephew of Micanopy), on the 3d instant. These chiefs entered into an arrangement to meet me at Fort Dade, with the other chiefs of the nation, on the 18th instant, and promised to send out runners and cause hostilities to be suspended until the conference shall have taken place." Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-67.

155. Jesup to Adjt. Gen., 7 Feb. 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 66-68.

156.

157. Navy Arch.

158. Extract from Col. Henderson's Journal, A-8, 1837, Navy Arch.

159. Sprague's Florida War, 168-170; An. Rep. War Dept., 1837; Jesup to Adjt. Gen., 17 Feb. 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 71; On Feb. 8, 1837 "about 200 Indians; under Coacoochee, or Wild Cat, attacked" Fort Mellon on Lake Monroe garrisoned by Harney's Dragoons. "Soon after, Colonel Henderson, U. S. Marines, met with success while in command of a brigade - volunteers and some of his own Corps - capturing a number of prisoners, destroying supplies and villages." (Rodenbough, "Everglade to with the 2d Dragoons", 24-25); "Passed Midshipman McLaughlin, serving with the Army, ready by my side to convey orders, received a ball in his breast." Hope for recovery. "Had charge of the supplies for the detachment." "Lieut. Piercy, of the Navy, Captain of the friendly Indians, with his Indian force, fought among the regular troops." etc. (Bvt. Col. Fanning's report on 9 Feb. 1837 of Battle of 8 Feb. 1837 written at Camp Monroe, on Lake Monroe, Fla. Life of Gen. Harney, 102-104, by L. U. Reavis.)

160. Captain G. W. Allen of 4th Inf. to Col. W. S. Foster, 10 Feb. 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 74.

161. Foster to Jesup, 15 Feb. 1837 and Jesup to Adjt. Gen, 17 Feb. 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 74.

162. Navy Arch.

163. An. Rep. Sec. War, 1837; In March of 1837 Chiefs signed capitulation and agreed to emigrate. It was not carried out and General Jesup, by a stratagem, made Osceola a prisoner. He was confined and died soon after. But the war kept on. (Winsor, Narr. and Crit. Hist., America VII, 406-408; The warfare

163. Continued.
proved so wearisome that, on March 6, 1837, the principal chiefs agreed to a capitulation, which specified that the entire nation should immediately emigrate west of the Mississippi. (Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 173.)

164. "Captain Harris, of the Marine Corps, who, we understand, is spoken of by General Jesup as a highly deserving and meritorious officer, and who was the bearer of the above report, was obliged to go round to New York, which prevented the receipt of the report at so early a period as was anticipated." (A. & N. Chron., 6 April, 1837, 215.); Muster Roll of Co. A for March carries note: Harris "left with despatches for Headquarters the 6th inst." (March 6); Capt. John Harris "left Fort Dade, E.F., for Washington City as bearer of dispatches, 7 March 1837." (Monthly Det. Off., May, 1837, M. C. Arch.) 2d Lt. Louis F. Whitney succeeded him in command of Co. B. of Horse Marines. (Monthly Det. Off., May, 1837, M. C. Arch.)

165. Extract from Col. Henderson's Journal, A-8, Navy Arch.

166. An. Rep. War Dept., 1837; A spot, within ten miles of Fort Brooke, Tampa Bay, was agreed upon, at which the nation should assemble, preparatory to emigration. By the middle of May large numbers were in camp under the direction of Micanopy, who had given his adhesion to the terms of capitulation. Alligator, Holatoochee, Jumper, and Cloud, and occasionally Coacoochee, came in to Fort Brooke, manifesting the best feelings, and apparently gratified in witnessing the preparations for their departure. Captain John Page, United States Army, was occupied in enrolling the names as they surrendered, and in issuing provisions and clothing. Twenty vessels lay in the harbor to transport them to New Orleans. From week to week the time of embarkation was postponed, upon the application of the chiefs, who gave as a reason, the expected arrival of friends and relatives, whom they wished to accompany them. An express came from Fort Mellon announcing the arrival there of Osceola or Powell, with his family, who expressed his desire for peace, and his approbation of the terms agreed upon

166. Continued.
in the Capitulation at Fort Dade. The commanding general believed the war to be at an end. The volunteers and militia were discharged. Colonel Henderson with his detachment of Marines was ordered to the north, and that portion of the regular forces remaining, was posted at eligible points for health and comfort. The letter from Mr. Poinsett, secretary of war, to General Josup evinces a proper solicitude for the army. (Sprague's Florida War, 178)

167. Dallas to Dickerson, 2 April, 1837, Navy Arch.

168.

169. A. & N. Chron., 15 June 1837, 379-380.

170. Henderson to Sec. of War J. R. Poinsett, 7 Oct. 1837, M. C. Arch.

171. A. & N. Chron., 15 June 1837, 376-377; Marine Off. Let. Bk., 1843, No. 70-A, Navy Arch.; M. C. Arch.; After treaty of March 6, 1837 "the Marines were sent North," etc. (Life of Gen. Harney, 114, by L. U. Reavis); "Referring to my interesting association with your Corps while under your command and having spent a greater portion of the last summer in the bosom of those you are wont to call your Children and whom I have often heard call you as by the apellation Father I cannot refrain from dropping you a few lines in commendation of the remnant of your universally admitted efficient Corps," wrote A. H. Falconar ofAppalachicola, on Sept. 11, 1837, to Henderson. (M. C. Arch.)

172. Monthly Det. Off., May and June 1837, M. C. Arch.; M. C. Arch.; Appalachicola, May 27. - The steamer Merchant, Capt. Baker, arrived here on Wednesday last from Tampa, which place she left on Monday last. The Merchant has on board 150 of the North Alabama mounted men on their return home. Lt. McNeil, and 75 U.S. Marines, under the command of Lt. Waldron, belonging to the W. India squadron, bound to Pensacola, together with Colonel Henderson and suite; passengers, Capt. Howle, adjutant inspector, Dr. Kearney of the Marine Corps, Lt. Chatard, U. S. Navy, Lts. Stark and Lang, and Lt. Brent of the U. S. Army. (A. & N. Chron., 22 June 1837, 394); Pensacola, May 27, - The Steamboat Merchant, Baker, master, arrived here last night,

172. Continued.
from Tampa Bay, by way of Appalachicola. - The M. left Tampa on Tuesday, last. On board are all the Marines of the West India squadron, under the command of Lieut. Waldron. About 150 of the mounted Alabama volunteers, and 30 horses, were landed at Appalachicola. Passengers, Col. Henderson, Com't Marine Corps, Capt. Howle, Adjutant of the Corps, Surgeon Kearney, U.S.N., Lieuts. Lang and Starke, of the Marine Corps, Lieut. Chatard, of the Navy, and Lieut. Brent, of the Army. The news at Tampa was that the Indians were still coming in. Osceola will be in with his warriors as early as is desired. It is understood that he will not come in until Cloud's party are off, which will be from the 10th to the 15th proximo. Gen. Jesup is still at Tampa with several companies of the Marine Corps and artillery. The sloop of war Vandalia, Crabb, commander, will sail for this port after the first shipment of Indians. The forces at Tampa are enjoying good health. Gazette. (A. & N. Chron., 15 June 1837, 379)

173. M. C. Arch.

174. A. & N. Chron., 22 June 1837, 394-395; ("We are glad to learn that Col. Henderson, and the officers who accompanied him, have returned to their families in good health. They have suffered much, in common with all with whom they have served, not less from the climate, and the peculiar nature of the country which has been the theatre of the war, than from the necessary hardships of service in so wild and destitute a region. The gallant corps which it is Col. Henderson good fortune to command, has always been distinguished wheresoever duty has called it. In the present case, the corps deserves peculiar commendation, from having volunteered in the war in Florida, and having repaired to its theatre, a thousand miles distant, to share in its perils and privations. Its commander deserves the praise of having proven himself worthy of his post, both by his gallantry in the field, and by patience and good example under all difficulties; and he, his officers and men, have most honorably maintained the pledge which they gave to the Government and to their country, when they first tendered their services. The corps remains in Florida under the veteran and gallant Lieutenant

174. Continued.
Colonel Miller, to make further sacrifices, and endure fresh hardships, should the obstinacy of the Indians, as now appears too probable, unhappily prolong the war. - National Intelligencer.") (A. & N. Chron., 22 June 1837, 394-395); Captain, Adjutant and Inspector Parke G. Howle, served as "Acting Adjutant General of the Army of the South" for a period. On May 22, 1837 he was ordered to proceed to Washington and report to the Adjutant General of the Army. He did so and on June 19, 1837 resumed his duties at Headquarters as Adjutant and Inspector. (Monthly Det. Off., May and June, 1837, M. C. Arch.) 1st Lt. George F. Lindsay "Brigade Quartermaster in the Army, Fort Brooke, E. F. on the 20th April 1837 detached for Phila. from Tampa Bay, E. F." (Monthly Det. Off., May, 1837, M. C. Arch.)

175. Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.; "When Col. Henderson solicited from Gen. Jesup orders to return hence after the hostile Creeks had imigrated to the West, I volunteered to General Jackson, then President to command any portion of the Marine Troops throughout the Florida War. I served in Florida under Genl. Jesup from October 1836 to the 24th of July 1837." (Major Samuel Miller to Sec. Navy David Henshaw, 24 Dec. 1843, M. C. Let. Sup., Navy Arch.) "When Col. Henderson left Florida with his staff and several Marine Officers for home, in May, I was placed in command of all the Army troops, volunteers and militia in the neighborhood of Tampa Bay, until I was relieved by orders from the General in Chief of the Army." (Major Samuel Miller to Sec. Navy David Henshaw, 24 Dec. 1843, M. C. Let. Sup., Navy Arch.)

176. M. C. Arch.

177. Muster Roll of Co. E., June 1837; Dulany to Henderson, 2 Sept. 1837, M. C. Arch.; Capt. Dulany wrote Henderson on Sept. 2, 1837 that "by a General Order of this date, Major Zantzinger with his company is ordered to relieve Lt. Terrett now on duty at Fort Pike, who is ordered to join this command"; Gen. Jesup seized about 90 Exiles who were confined within the pickets at Tampa Bay, on the second of June (1837), and "at once ordered them to New Orleans, under the Charge of Lieutenant G. H. Treavitt [George H. Terrett] of the United States Marines." (Giddings, The Exiles of Florida, 154)

178. Upton Mil. Pol. U.S., 173.

179. Miller to Henderson, 15 June 1837, M. C. Arch.

180. An. Rep. Sec. War, 1837.

181. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78.

182. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, p. 164.

183. Miller to Jesup, 8 July 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 91.

184. Miller to Jesup, 8 July 1837, Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 91.

185. On Feb. 11, 1837, at Fort Brooke, Tampa Bay, Master Commandant Thomas Crabbe wrote Secretary of the Navy, Mahlon Dickerson that "First Lieutenant N. S. Waldron, of the Marines, has been associated with me on duty at Various times and places since 1st Oct. 1836, and is now under my command at this post. The untiring zeal in boats and on shore in prosecuting the War in which we are engaged has brought him particular under my notice. The merits entitle him to more than the commission which he now holds and it would be gratifying to me to see him a Brevet Captain." (M. C. Arch.) On Feb. 11, 1837 Lieutenant Levin M. Powell of the Navy, wrote Commodore Dallas that "Lt. N. S. Waldron of the Marines, having been associated with me by your order in the recent Expedition on the Coast of Florida, I beg leave to add my own to many evidences of his ability and zeal and untiring perseverance in the execution of delicate and arduous duties which have been assigned him in the present War. He was in command (as he has been mostly for the past year) of a detachment of Marines in amount equal to two companies, and in addition to the trying service which he shared with them, displayed conduct so meritorious that I should gladly find him come within the rule which bestows Brevets." (M. C. Arch.) Commodor Dallas on March 29, 1837, on the frigate Constellation at Pensacola Bay wrote the Secretary of the Navy forwarding the letters of Crabbe and Powell and added that "Lieutenant Waldron has been employed during the Seminole War, in active and arduous service which he has performed with ability and zeal. He is well deserving of such promotion as

185. Continued.
the Department can confer." (M. C. Arch.) On Sept. 23, 1837 Mister R. R. Waldron, brother of Lieutenant Waldron, at Washington, forwarding the above three letters, stated that there were "other letters in the Adjutant General's office" and that "Colonel Lindsay authorized me to say that he was one of the most valuable officers under his command," his letter being directed to Colonel Henderson. (M. C. Arch.)

186. Lyon to Henderson, 2 June 1837, M. C. Arch.

187. Howle's Casualty List, M. C. Arch.

188. In General Order No. 5, 2 March, 1837, the Adjutant General of the Army wrote that "the Secretary of War, ad interim, directs that the following named officers of the Army be assigned to duty in the Indian Department with instructions to report for orders to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. * * * Second Lieutenant John T. Sprague [who resigned from the Marine Corps, July 3, 1837], who will receive the instructions of the Commissioner." (M. C. Arch.) The A. & N. Chron., 20 April 1837, 248 contains a news item that Lt. Sprague left Washington a short time before April, 1837 for Chicago, Ill. "on Indian Emigrating Service." In War Department Special Order No. 26, of April 20, 1837, "Lieutenants [John G.] Reynolds and [Thomas T.] Sloan of the Marine Corps, are assigned to duty in the Indian Department, and will receive and obey the instructions of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs." (M. C. Arch.); Muster Roll of Co. C. for August, 1836 shows Lt. Reynolds "det. 17th Inst. as Military Agent for removal of Indians." Muster roll of Co. E. for August, 1836 shows Lt. Sloan "on extra duty as Military Agent for the removal of the Indians since the 21st Inst." Muster roll for Co. E. shows Lt. Sloan "on det. service as Military Agent for removal of Indians by order of General Jesup of 22d August," 1836. The Muster roll of Co. E. for October, 1836 shows Lt. Sloan as "Indian Agent to Eho Argos Camp" and same on the following month. The Muster roll for Co. C. for November, 1836 shows Lt. Reynolds "attached to Indian Dept. in Alabama." 1st Lt. Reynolds: "Indian Department. Detached 17th inst. as Military Agent for the removal of the Creek Indians. On the 20th April, 1837, assigned to duty

188. Continued.
in the Indian Department and ordered to receive and obey the instructions of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs." (Monthly Det. Off., Aug., 1836, M. C. Arch.) 2d. Lt. Sloan was "Detached 20th inst., as Military Agent for the removal of the Creek Indians. On the 20th April 1837, assigned to duty in the Indian Department, and ordered to receive and obey the instructions of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs." (Monthly Det. Off., Aug., 1836, M. C. Arch.) 2d. Lt. Sprague: "Indian Department. Asst. Com. of Sub. from 1 June to 29 July 1836. Appointed Mil. Agent for the removal of Creek Indians 29 July 1836. On the 8 March 1837 assigned to duty in the Indian Dept. and ordered to receive the instructions of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs." (Monthly Det. Off., May, 1837, M. C. Arch.) "Indian Department. Resigned; having been appointed a Lieutenant in the Army 3 July, 1837, which he accepted 22 August 1837." (Monthly Det. Off., Nov., 1837, M. C. Arch.) Sprague apparently continued on duty with the Indian Dept. until he accepted his Army appointment on August 22, 1837. He wrote the book called "The History of the Florida War." See also Nat. Intell., 2 March 1838; A. & N. Chron., 16 Aug. 1838.

189. A. & N. Chron., 20 July 1837, 42 quoting the New Orleans Picayune, 2 July 1837.

190. M. C. Arch.

191. Jesup to Henderson, 4 July 1837, M. C. Arch.

192. Sprague's Florida War, 180-181; See also Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 32-33.

193. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 94.

194. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, pp. 94-95.

195. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, No. 78, p. 91.

196. M. C. Arch.; Henderson wrote Capt. Ward Marston at Boston on July 17, 1837 that "the troops on that service are expected to return shortly".

197. Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.; A. & N. Chron., 31 Aug. 1837, 140; "Sr. In obedience to orders from the General in Chief of the Army, Lt. Col. Miller is relieved from duty in this Territory and will proceed to Washington, and report to the Adjutant General. The Major General Commanding the Army of the South, seizes the occasion to express to Lt. Col. Miller the high sense he entertains of his valuable and efficient services, both in Alabama and Florida. He will always remember with feelings of gratitude the constant and able support which the Lt. Col. has on all occasions given to him, and he begs him to accept his thanks, and wishes him a safe and prosperous voyage home and a happy meeting with his friends." (M. C. Let. Bk., Navy Arch., Extract from Orders No. 151, 18 July 1837; on back of let. No. 112.)

198. A. & N. Chron., 31 Aug. 1837, 140.

199. Dulany to Henderson, 2 Sept. 1837, M. C. Arch.; on August 31, 1837 Capt. Dulany had on hand: 83 blankets, 454 pairs socks, 138 fatigue overalls, 34 fatigue jackets, and 40 watch coats. (Dulany to Henderson, 31 Aug. 1837, M. C. Arch.)

200. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323; "The revenue cutters Dexter and Jefferson, which, by consent of the Secretary of the Treasury, were transferred to Commodore Dallas, after having performed the duties required of them, have been returned to the revenue service; and the steamers American and Major Dade, also under his command, have been transferred to the army, at the request of the Secretary of War. The employment of these revenue cutters and steamboats, under the command of Commodore Dallas, has subjected the Navy Department to heavy charges, not provided for in the appropriations for the year 1837." (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1837, 762)

201. Dallas to Dickerson, 18 Sept. 1837, Navy Arch.

202. Dulany to Henderson, 2 Sept. 1837, M. C. Arch., By Spec. Order No. 60 of the "Cherokee Agency", Terrett was ordered to report to his Commandant. (M. C. Arch.)

203. M. C. Arch.

204. M. C. Arch.

205. Howle's Casualty List, M. C. Arch.; for Tait's death see Collum, Hist. U.S.M.C., 80.

206.

207. Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 323, 184.

208. Sprague's Florida War, 104; Upton Mil. Pol., U.S., 175; Am. St. Pap., VII, 1920.

209. An. Rep. Sec. War, 2 Dec. 1837.

210. Richardson's Mess. and Pap., 393.

211. Upton Mil. Pol., U.S., 173-174; Am. St. Pap., VII, 987-988; Taylor's report in Sprague's Florida War, 203.

212. Navy Reg.

213. Navy Reg.; Muster Rolls.

214. Navy Reg.; 1st Lt. Watkins was "Asst. Com. Sub. in the Army. On the 30th Sept. 1836, Asst. Com. of Sub. and Asst. Qr. Mr. at Appalachicola, Florida. Asst. Com. Sub. at Fort Clinch, E. F. since 27 December 1836." Joined Co. E. on July 4, 1837 as C. O. of it. Left Florida in Sept., 1837 "under orders for Washington City, orders from Commanding General of the 11th inst. No. 179, for the purpose of arranging his public accounts." Reported to the Adjutant General (Army) on October 12, 1837, and "registered on duty settling public accounts." (Monthly Det. Off., May, July, Sept., and Oct., 1837, M. C. Arch.)

215. Howle's Casualty List, M. C. Arch.

216. Navy Arch.; Early in February the Indians attacked the homes of several whites in the vicinity of Tallahassee. See A. & N. Chron., 8 March 1838 publishing a letter dated at Tallahassee, Feb. 14, 1838 reading in part that "the efficient force of

216. Continued.
Marines, under Lieut. Waldron, so promptly ordered into the interior by Commodore Dallas, has relieved us from all fear and anxiety" and also that "Lieut. Waldron has gone in pursuit with the force under his command" of the Indians who attacked the house of Mr. Johnson twenty miles east of Tallahassee. A Mr. J. Gadsden on February 12 1838 wrote from Wascissa to Secretary of War Poinsett regarding affairs in Jefferson County stating in part: "Fortunately for us some Marines passed by here yesterday; we have despatched a courier to bring them back and shall station them for a time at the house assailed last night." (Exec. Doc., 25th Cong., 2d Sess., Ser. 328, 219, Vol. 8, pp. 7-8); "We have scoured this part of the country all through - that is, where it is not under water, - and furnished night guards to citizens resident in the vicinity. About 11 miles east of this, ten or twelve Indians attacked a house, containing one man and his family; as they attempted to force open the door, he knocked out one of the pannels and shot the head man, upon which they immediately retreated, and took the body with them. It was probably Tigertail, as he has been up this way with a party of some thirty. We think to leave this place soon, and make an ascent of the Ocilla river in boats, to try what is to be done in that quarter. We have brushed up the St. Marks, and the islands, without success. The country is at present quite unfavorable for operations against the Indians, owing to the great body of rain that has lately fallen. I have never witnessed heavier rains than we have had for the last two weeks." (Letter dated at Camp Cocheco, March 1, 1838, of a Marine Officer published in A. & N. Chron., 29 March 1838, 200)

217. Navy Arch.

218. Drake, Ab. Races of North America, 487.

219. Henderson to Sec. Navy J. K. Paulding, 20 July 1838, M. C. Arch.; Lt. R. C. Caldwell, in the summer of 1838, proceeded "to the Cherokee Country from which (after a very short stay, for the difficulties with that people were over before our troops reached there) Country" he entered Washington

219. Continued.
and was relieved from service with the Army in August, 1838. (Caldwell's letter of August 24, 1844, M. C. Arch.); "I accompanied the Troops to the Creek Country in May 1836. Made the campaign of that summer. Proceeded in the autumn to East Florida and there remained till the autumn of 1838, then proceeded to the Cherokee Country from which Country, after a very short stay (for the difficulties with that people were over before our people reached there) I returned to Washington City and was relieved from service with the Army in August, 1838." (R. C. Caldwell, at Pensacola, Fla. to Sec. Navy John G. Mason, 24 Aug. 1844, M. C. Let. Bk. Sup., Navy Arch.); By Special Order No. 73, July 30, 1838 Caldwell was ordered from the "Cherokee Agency" to report to Headquarters, U.S.M.C. (M. C. Arch.); In Order No. 61, of 2d Brigade, April 26, 1838, Col. Smith the Brigade Commander, thanked "Captain William Dulany, U.S. Marine Corps and his officers and men of the Marine Corps". He wrote that "to Lieut. R. C. Caldwell, U.S. Marine Corps, the Colonel is under great obligations for his laborious and accurate survey of all the routes traversed by the Brigade." (M. C. Arch.); See also Monthly Det. Off., July 1838, M. C. Arch.)

220. M. C. Arch.; "During the last Campaign in Florida, I had the honor to include as part of the Brigade under my Command the Detachment of the Marine Corps serving under Captain William Dulany. The duties performed by the Corps were so arduous and so frequent that to mention them would be but to give a history of the Campaign. It was first on the ground marked out for our operations and was the last to leave it, and no moment of the intervening time was spent in idleness. A large part of the Brigade consisted of volunteers who had just entered service, on whom the value of good discipline, correct conduct, and of soldierly bearing could in no way be so forcibly impressed as by example. It was my good fortune to find that example, in its highest perfection, in the Battalion under Captain Dulany. No order however sudden ever found it unprepared; no labor however severe even produced a murmur, and no indulgence ever produced disorder. It was always ready and always cheerful, its privations, its

220. Continued.
labors etc., its merit must be probably without reward - for we had not the fortune of meeting the enemy in contest but the constancy displayed by the Marines through a difficult and protracted pursuit shewed more of their excellence than twenty fights could do, they had all the hardships of the latter without any of their inspiring motives. From the Officers of the Corps and especially from the Commander of the Battalion, Captain William Dulany with whom I was more immediately in relation, I received not only that assistance which I had a right to expect from officers under my command - but that zealous and hasty co-operation which distinguishes the generous and high minded soldier. I am aware that it must cost an officer whom years of service have made master of his profession, some struggles when he finds himself by the operation of our laws subordinate to one he may be well able to instruct. And I owe infinite thanks to Captain Dulany that when he found himself in a position which could not be wholly agreeable, it seemed only to influence him to the more earnest and rigerous execution of his duty. The position in which I am placed affords me no means by which I can repay the obligations under which I lie to Captain Dulany, his officers and his men. I can only record in your hands as Commanding Officer of the Corps my testimony in favor of their perfect discipline and enduring constancy and my regret that the distribution of rewards for "meritorious services in Florida" is not with me. The feeling with which I parted with Captain Dulany and his Command are such as will always interest me in the Marine Corps, and I shall hear of its honors and of its success as if I partook of them." (Col. P. F. Smith, U.S.A., to Henderson, 17 July 1838, M. C. Arch.). General Winfield Scott, wrote that "Captain Dulany is an excellent Officer and has served several years with the Army. I knew him in the Creek Country in 1836 and again in the Cherokee Country in 1838. In the mean time he served in Florida and left a very favorable impression, as I hear thru' several respectable sources, on the minds of the Army Officers." (Statement of Gen. Scott, 31 May 1842, M. C. Arch.) Capt. Dulany was brevetted a Major on March 3, 1843.

221. Sprague's Florida War, 221; Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408.

222. Navy Arch.; Logbook of Concord.

223. The Exiles of Florida by Joshua R. Giddings

224. Nat. Intell., 2 March 1838.

225. Reynolds to Henderson, 26 March 1838, M. C. Arch.; Lt. Reynolds continued on duty under the Indian Emigrating Service with the title of "Military Agent" until March, 1839. (M. C. Muster Rolls, Navy Reg.) "Agreeable to your request expressed in your letter of the 10th instant, you are hereby relieved from further service in the Department of Indian Affairs, and will consider yourself at liberty to report to, and receive and obey the orders of your proper commandant of the Marine Corps." (J. Hartley Crawford of War Dept. Office Indian Affairs to Lt. Reynolds, 28 March 1839, M. C. Arch.) "While stationed at New Orleans, I applied for Orders to return to Washington, before hearing from thence, I received directions to report to Genl. Taylor for Orders; I am now waiting his arrival at this post, he is expected tomorrow, it is impossible for me to imagine, what duty I am to be assigned, it cannot be for the performance of that which I have been detailed for, as there are no Indians for emigration. Two men belonging to this post, being out yesterday hunting were shot and scalped within five miles distant; a command is now absent in pursuit." (Reynolds at Fort White, Fla., to Henderson, 1 April 1839, M. C. Arch.)

226. Henderson to Sec. Navy, 28 July 1838, M. C. Arch.; See also Certificate Bk., No. 5, pp. 40-41, M. C. Arch.; A corporal of Marines of Company E had been sent ashore at Baton Rouge to bring in some stragglers and was accidently left ashore. Army Special Order No. 96 attached this corporal temporarily to the Fourth U.S. Infantry and by order of Gen. Scott a copy of the Special Order was furnished U.S.M.C. Headquarters. (Robert Anderson, Asst. Adjt. Gen., to Henderson, 13 Aug. 1838, M. C. Arch.) On July 24, 1838 Colonel Commandant Henderson issued the following commendatory order: "SOLDIERS. Two years ago you left your Stations as Volunteers for a

226. Continued.
single campaign against the Creek Indians in Alabama. In less than three months after you took your first position in the hostile country on the West bank of the Chattahoochee, you saw the principal chief of that formidable tribe followed by his whole nation take up his line of March from the banks of the Tallapoussa for his home beyond the Mississippi. The manner in which you performed your duty there, was such as to elicit an order from the President for a more arduous and hazardous Service in the Swamps of Florida. On the eve of your return to your Stations, this order was received, and your commandant cannot soon forget how cheerfully you met it. He was your Commander in your first campaign against the Seminoles in their unexplored Morrasses and his esprit-de-corps was most amply Gratified in the universal tribute paid to your fidelity, exact discipline and untiring perseverance in this arduous and harrassing Service. He left you when it was ended and under a belief that your toils were drawing to a close. You were called however to further dangers, and exposures and the General with whom you served has borne ample testimony to your conduct during the succeeding Campaign. Soldiers - Accept the congratulations of your Colonel, on your return from a tour of duty equally honourable to yourselves, and to the Corps to which you belong. Capt. Dulaney is relieved from the Command of the Battalion. To him, and to its other officers the thanks of their chief are most cordially conveyed. He sincerely wishes they may find an ample reward for all their toils and privations in a return to their homes, and, in the assurance that they have elevated their Ancient Corps in the estimation of the Country."

227. Henderson to Sec. Navy J. K. Paulding, 18 July 1838, M. C. Arch.

228. The information on page 351 of Sprague's Florida War should be verified before accepted.

229. Sprague's Florida War, 351.

230. Navy Arch.

231. Paulding to Mayo, 5 April 1839, 14 June 1839 and 22 June 1839, Navy Arch.

232. Mayo to Sec. Navy, 25 July 1839, Navy Arch.

233. Logbook of Poinsett. On July 30, 1839 an armed party, including "Lieut. Sloan of the Marine Corps with nine Marines," (in the dinghey) left the Poinsett at Key Biscayno in pursuit of Indians. (Logbook of Poinsett).

234. Mayo to Sec. Navy, 30 July 1839, Navy Arch.

235. Logbook of Poinsett.

236. Logbook of Poinsett.

237. Mayo to Sec. Navy 8 Sept. 1839, Navy Arch.; "Employed in fitting out an expedition to New River; the following officers and men were detached, under the command of Lieut. Davis, Lieut. Sloane (Marine) Asst. Surg. A. S. Creary, and Midn. Watkins, James Curtis, Jos. Devine, Wm. Bateman, Noah Grant, Jno. Smith, Tho. Durdine, Simon Green, Wm. Locke, Andrew Fleming, Lawrence Harding, Thos. Foster, Geo. Cole (Marines) Sergt. Brown, Corpl. Robinson, Privates Cannon, Pattern, Woodfield, Andrews, Elosha, Gearheart, Miller, Pettinger, Scharfer, Terrell, Wash. Spaulding, O'Brien, Red." (Logbook of Poinsett, 8 Sept. 1839).

238. Mayo to Sec. Navy, 18 Sept. 1839, Navy Arch.

239. Logbook of Poinsett.

240. Sec. Navy Paulding to McLaughlin, 9 Dec. 1839, Navy Arch.; Corporal Thomas T. Starke died on board the Poinsett in Dec., 1839. (Sprague's Florida War, 550).

241. Nat. Intell., 18 Dec. 1839; Lt. Terrett joined the Flirt from the Receiving Vessel Pioneer, at Baltimore, in Dec. 1839; In Jan., 1840 Terrett "on detached service from this vessel [Flirt] at Tea Table Key, Florida." In February he was at Tea Table Key until June when he was on duty aboard the Flirt. In July and August, 1840

241. Continued.
Terrett was on duty on the Eastern Coast of Florida. He was detached from Flirt August 31, 1840 and on duty on Indian Key where he remained until October 31, 1840 when he was relieved from duty on Indian Key by 2d Lt. R. T. Taylor, and proceeded to Washington. (Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.)

242. Mayo to Sec. Navy, 27 Dec. 1839, Navy Arch.

243. Paulding to Davis, 30 Dec. 1839, Navy Arch.; Navy Reg. 1 Jan. 1840 shows Lt. Terrett on Flirt and Lt. Sloan "on duty in Florida." Lt. Terrett was on detached service from the Flirt at Tea Table Key from Jan., 1840 to June, 1840. (Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.)

244. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 4 Feb. 1840, Navy Arch.

245. E. T. Shubrick to McLaughlin, 17 April 1840, Navy Arch.

246. Sprague's Florida War, 243.

247. Exiles of Florida by Joshua R. Giddings, 27; See also Sprague's Florida War, 243-246.

248. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 11 Aug. 1840, Navy Arch.

249. Murray to McLaughlin, 7 Aug. 1840, Navy Arch.; see also M. C. Gaz., Aug., 1931, 27; "Indian Key is one of the smallest links of the long chain of coral islands which beginning at Cape Florida or Key Biscayne follows the coast, bending around the end of the peninsula, and ends with the Tortugas group." (Harper's, LXXXIII, 591-594) see also Sprague's Florida War, 243-246.

250. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 11 Aug. 1840, Navy Arch.

251. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 11 Aug. 1840, Navy Arch.; See also Sprague's Florida War, 243-246.

252. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 11 Aug. 1840, Navy Arch.; Lt. McLaughlin reported that "the General Hospital of the Squadron was established on Indian Key. All the deaths on the Key were hospital cases." (Sprague's Florida War, 549)

253. McLaughlin to E. T. Shubrick, 9 Aug. 1840, Navy Arch.

254. An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 5 Dec. 1840; A. & N. Chron., 17 Dec. 1840; 2d Lt. Isaac R. Wilson joined the schooner Flirt in Nov., 1840. (Monthly Det. Off., Nov., 1840, M. C. Arch.)

255. Colonel Commandant Henderson wrote Sec. Navy Paulding on Oct. 22, 1840, "Lieut. Taylor has been ordered to Florida." (M. C. Arch.); 2d Lt. Isaac R Wilson was on duty at Indian Key in Dec., 1840, continued on duty there until shortly before his resignation was accepted on May 29, 1841. (Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.); Lieut. Terrett was detached from the Flirt Aug. 31, 1840 and assigned to duty commanding Marines on Indian Key where he remained until Oct. 31, 1840 when he was relieved by 2d Lt. R. T. Taylor, and proceeded to Washington. 1st Lt. Thomas T. Sloan, although remaining attached to the Flirt, assumed command of Marines on Indian Key on Dec. 31, 1840. (Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.)

256. Lt. Sloan's letter, May 10, 1841, M. C. Arch.; see Size Roll, and Sprague's Florida War, 550. Smith was discharged as invalid on Aug. 20, 1841. (M. C. Arch.)

257. Private Henry Elisha, Florida Squadron, died August 21, 1841 at Indian Key; Corporal David Cannon, Florida Squadron, died Sept. 14, 1841 at Indian Key; Private Joseph H. Root, Florida Squadron, died Sept. 24, 1841 at Indian Key; Private James B. Sawyer, Florida Squadron, was drowned Oct. 7, 1841 at Indian Key; Private (Acting Corporal) Joseph Smith, Florida Squadron, was drowned Oct. 7, 1841 at Indian Key; Musician Frederick Dunn, Florida Squadron, died Nov. 1, 1841 at Indian Key; Private John C. Ayers, Florida Squadron, died Nov. 11, 1841 at Indian Key; Private Robert Gray,

257. Continued.
Florida Squadron, died Nov. 20, 1841 at Indian Key; Private Thomas Ennis, Florida Squadron, died Nov. 28, 1841 at Indian Key; Private Jacob Shultz, Florida Squadron, died Dec. 5, 1841 at Indian Key; Private Stephen Schoolcraft, Florida Squadron, died December 9, 1841 at Indian Key; Private William Williams, Florida Squadron, died Dec. 16, 1841 at Indian Key; Private John Nicholson, Florida Squadron, died Dec. 22, 1841 at Indian Key; Private Andrew Kelly, Florida Squadron, died Dec. 26, 1841 at Indian Key; Private Rufus Griffin, Florida Squadron, Died Jan. 16, 1842 at Indian Key; Corporal L. D. Pierpoint, Florida Squadron, died Jan. 20, 1842 at Indian Key; Private Thomas Walsh, Flirt, died at sea, July 18, 1842. (Sprague's Florida War, 549.) The General Hospital was on Indian Key and all the above deaths except that of Walsh were on that Key (id); page 550 of Sprague sets forth another list of Marine deaths which includes the above names but the dates vary slightly and Griffin and Pierpoint died at Fort Dallas instead of on Indian Key. This second list includes the name of Private Jeremiah Kingsbury who died at Fort Dallas on March 14, 1842.

258. McLaughlin on Flirt at Key Biscayne to Sec. Navy, 24 Jan., Navy Arch. and Nat. Intell., 9 March 1841, 3; Monthly Det. Off., Jan., 1841 shows Sloan "Schooner Flirt" and "on expedition in Everglades from 1st to 21st inst."

259. Logbook of Wave.

260. McLaughlin on Flirt at Key West to Sec. Navy, 14 March 1841, Navy Arch.; Monthly Det. Off., March shows Lt. Sloan "Schooner Flirt" and "absent since 9th inst. on an examination of the Keys and Rivers on the Western Coast of Florida."

261. Logbook of Wave.

262. Winsor Narr. and Crit. Hist. America, VII, 406-408; Sprague's Florida War, 265.

263. Logbook of Wave.

264. Logbook of Wave.

265. Sec. Navy Paulding to McLaughlin, 31 Aug. 1841, Navy Arch.; An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1841 referred to these four vessels.

266. George E. Badger to Henderson, 19 Aug. 1841, M. C. Arch.

267. Monthly Det. Off., June, 1841, M. C. Arch.

268. Monthly Det. Off., M. C. Arch.; Lt. Maguire, arrived at Washington on Jan. 25, 1842 and his resignation was accepted on the same date. (Monthly Det. Off., Jan. 1842, M. C. Arch.)

269. Logbook of Flirt.

270. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy A. P. Upshur, 8 Oct. 1841, Navy Arch.; The Log of the U.S. Schooner Madison at Indian Key, for Oct. 9, 1841 contains the notation: "At 4 sent all Marines on shore to the Post."

271. Tansill at Fort Dallas to Henderson, 10 Feb. 1842, M. C. Arch.

272. McLaughlin on the Flirt at Indian Key to Sec. Navy Upshur, 25 Nov. 1841, Navy Arch. and Sprague's Florida War, 333-334.

273. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 27 Nov. 1841, Navy Arch.; Mid. Hezekiah Niles died of yellow fever in December, 1841, at Fort Simmons on the Carlosahatchee. (McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 23 Dec. 1841, Navy Arch.)

274. Logbook of Wave.

275. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 23 Dec. 1841, Navy Arch. and Sprague's Florida War, 358-359; McLaughlin in a long letter dated December 26, 1841 to Col. W. J. Worth described this expedition and other matters. Among other things he wrote that "Lt. Com. Rodgers has been directed to require for camp equipage for my Marines, who are ejected from their barracks by the sick. Many of my men are thoroughly worn out,

275. Continued.
and condemned by a board of surgeons as unfit for service. Fifty are about being sent to northern hospitals, and we have still a sick report of one hundred. There is no disease of a malignant type known among them, but a general sinking of the system, a 'regular cave-in' of the constitution. * * * Five out of thirty of Colt's rifles have bursted in firing, after being loaded for ten days, doing injury to those around. I am compelled, therefore, to return to the musket." The Log of the Wave, Dec. 23, 1841, contains the notation: "The Expedition returned. Lieut. Comg. T. T. Sloan and Lt. R. Tansill came on board with a detachment of Marines, to take passage to Indian Key."

276. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 17 Jan. 1842, Navy Arch.

277. McLaughlin to Rodgers, 1 Feb. 1842, Sprague's Florida War, 381-382.

278. Logbook of Madison.

279. Rodgers on brig Jefferson at Indian Key, 12 April 1842 and McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 29, April 1842, Navy Arch. and Sprague's Florida War, 385-388.

280. Lt. J. B. Marchand to McLaughlin, 23 March 1842, Navy Arch. and Sprague's Florida War, 383-384.

281. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 29 April 1842, Navy Arch. and Sprague's Florida War, 387-388.

282. McLaughlin to Sec. Navy, 26 May 1842, Navy Arch. and Sprague's Florida War, 389-390, and in this report McLaughlin wrote that a "Scout of Marines under Lt. Taylor" was "compelled to return abruptly to their post for want of water"; The Log of the Madison for May 3, 1842 stated that an expedition from that vessel "returned from Fort Centre, attended by the men left at Fort, under Lieut. Taylor of Marines."

283. Sprague's Florida War, 351, 436; Fort Dallas was situated on the present site of the City of Miami. Lt. McLaughlin, on Jan. 16, 1842, re-

283. Continued.
ported that he would hasten "to take possession" of Fort Dallas, "with a detachment of Marines, so soon as an arrangement can be effected for the transfer." (McLaughlin on the Flirt at Indian Key, to Sec. Navy, 16 Jan. 1842, Navy Arch.) On Feb. 1, 1842 a detachment of Marines, under Lieut. Sloan, was sent from the Wave to garrison Fort Dallas. (Logbook of Wave)

284. Logbook of Flirt.

285. Monthly Det. Off., June, 1842, M. C. Arch.; On May 11, 1842 "Lt. Taylor and eleven Marines" left the Van Buren, then at Florida Reef, for Fort Dallas. (Logbook of Van Buren)

286. Logbook of Wave.

287. Monthly Det. Off., Aug., 1842, M. C. Arch.

288. Logbook of Jefferson.

289. Monthly Det. Off., Aug., 1842, M. C. Arch.

290. "Colonel Worth will be informed that the naval force on the coast has been directed by the Secretary of the Navy to withdraw, whenever the commanding officer in Florida shall declare the cessation of hostilities, and shall deem their services no longer necessary." (J. C. Spencer to Maj. Gen. Scott, 10 May 1842, Sprague's Florida War, 478-479.)

291. Worth to Adjt. Gen. Jones, 14 June 1842, Sprague's Florida War, 481.

292. Worth at Headquarters, Army of Florida, Fort Brooke, to McLaughlin, 17 June 1842, Sprague's Florida War, 386.

293. Worth to Adjt. Gen. Army, 20 June 1842, Sprague's Florida War, 387.

294. Sprague's Florida War, 386,490.

295. Navy Arch.

296. Lt. McLaughlin to Lt. Henry, 8 July 1842, Navy Arch. and Sprague's Florida War, 490-492.

297. Muster Roll of Indian Key for July, 1842 shows Lts. Sloan and Tansill and 71 Marines on board the Flirt but all these officers and men went north on Flirt. 51 men joined the Receiving Ship Pennsylvania in July, 1842 while the remaining 20 Marines joined Gosport Marine Barracks in August, 1842.

298. Sprague's Florida War, 521-524.

299. Sprague's Florida War, 521-524.

300. A. & N. Chron., 25 Jan. 1844.

301. Sprague's Florida, 525.

INDEX FOR PART ONE AND TWO OF
CHAPTER VI, Volume II.

JAPAN, 1846-1860

Material and Sources
of
Chapter XVIII, Volume II
(Part One)

History of the United States Marine Corps

By

Major Edwin North McClellan, U.S. Marines
Officer-in-Charge
Historical Section

(Notes and Index will be found in Part Two)

(Only two hundred copies made)

First Edition
September 21, 1932

FORENOTE

This compilation is not the final manuscript of this Chapter but represents only material and sources upon which it will be based. Since the information expressed in this History required original research, which has not been completed, it was decided to publish it first in mimeographed form. Considerable additional information will have been collected by the time it is desirable to write the final manuscript for printing. It is purposely made voluminous in order to make public, details of early Marine Corps History that obviously will not be included in a printed work because of lack of space. The plan provides for seven large volumes divided into appropriate chapters.

If details concerning the participation of the Navy and Army in any operation or incident described herein do not appear, such omission occurs only because it is impracticable in a history of this character to set forth more than the work of the Marines themselves. To do more than this would extend the history beyond a practical scope and size. In many of the operations described, the Navy or the Army, or both, have been present in greater strength than the Marines, and full credit is here given for their splendid achievements.

Only two hundred copies of this chapter have been made. If for any reason those to whom it is sent do not desire to retain it please inform the Historical Section, U.S. Marine Corps, Washington, D.C. and arrangements will be made for its return.

As a matter of convenience this chapter is divided into two parts.

The following form of citation is suggested if it is desired to cite, either in published works, or manuscript, any information contained herein:-

(McClellan, Hist., U.S.M.C., 1st ed., II,
Ch. XVIII, p--)

CHAPTER XVIII, VOLUME TWO

JAPAN, 1846-1860

President Andrew Jackson in 1832 despatched Edmund Roberts to the Far East to negotiate treaties with Cochin-China, Siam and Muscat. He was also authorized to institute a separate mission to Japan if he found the "prospect favorable."[1] He sailed on the Peacock, commanded by Captain David Geisinger, from Boston in March, 1832.[2] Mr. Roberts visited China, Cochin-China, and Siam. A treaty of amity and commerce with Siam was completed in March, 1833. For some reason Mr. Roberts did not make the proposed visit to Japan. Second Lieutenant H. W. Fowler, who commanded the Marines of the Peacock, and other officers, accompanied Mr. Roberts on his visits ashore.[2] In 1835, when about to leave Washington on his second embassy to the Orient, Mr. Roberts was directed to go to Japan and make an attempt to open negotiations for a treaty with Japan.[3] He visited the Far East with the Peacock and Enterprise and exchanged ratifications of the treaty with Siam at Bangkok in March 1836. Commodore Edmund P. Kennedy commanded this East India Squadron and was of great assistance to Mr. Roberts.[3] Mr. Roberts died in China before making the effort to visit Japan and Commodore Kennedy, having no instructions, did not proceed there.[4]

The first exploring expedition sent out by the United States government, sailed from Norfolk, in August of 1838. It was commanded by Lieutenant Charles Wilkes whose flag flew from the Vincennes. Among other things Secretary of the Navy

James K. Paulding ordered him to "proceed to the coast of Japan, taking in your route as many doubtful islands as possible, and you have permission to pass through the Straits of Sangar into the Sea of Japan, where you may spend as much time as is compatible with your arrival at the proper season in the Sea of Sooloo or Mindoro." On November 27, 1841, Wilkes sailed from the Hawaiian Islands for the Far East. Owing to the lateness of the season and the loss of the Peacock, he abandoned the proposed visit to Japan. The Vincennes and Flying Fish arrived at Manila on January 3, 1842.[5]

Caleb Cushing was appointed Commissioner to China by President John Tyler in May, 1843. He landed at Macao from the U.S.S. Brandywine[6] on February 27, 1844.[7] Commodore Foxhall A. Parker commanded the East India Squadron and First Lieutenant Archibald H. Gillespie commanded the Marines of the Brandywine. Mr. Cushing negotiated the first treaty between China and the United States,[8] and conceived the idea that Japan might be induced to follow the example of China.[9] His views were communicated to President Tyler who, through Secretary of State John C. Calhoun, in 1844, sent Cushing "full power to treat with the Japanese authorities."[10] Mr. Cushing left China before the arrival of Calhoun's letter.[10]

On April 15, 1845, Secretary of State James Buchanan wrote Alexander H. Everett, who had succeeded Cushing, clothing him with full power to negotiate a commercial treaty with Japan.[10] Mr. Everett went out in the Columbus (Captain Thomas

W. Wyman) which flew the broad pennant of Commodore James Biddle.[10] Mr. Everett was taken ill enroute and left the Columbus at Rio Janeiro, after transferring his powers to Biddle.[10] The orders of Commodore Biddle, however, had anticipated such a contingency and directed him that if Mr. Everett could not gain access to Japanese ports he was "to persevere in the design, yet not in such a manner as to excite a hostile feeling, or a distrust of the government of the United States."[11]

The Columbus anchored below Macao on December 24, 1845.[12] The Vincennes arrived at Macao on January 5, 1846.[13] Twelve men on the Columbus died of "Asiatic cholera" at Manila.[14] The Columbus and Vincennes arrived Amoy on June 5, 1846,[15] and sailed from there to the Chusan Islands. Biddle then visited Ningpo and Shanghai om the Vincennes and later rejoined the Columbus.[15]

In July Biddle decided to proceed to Japan. He wrote Secretary of the Navy George Bancroft that on July 7, 1846 "as your instructions direct me to ascertain if the ports of Japan are accessible, I proceeded upon leaving the coast of China towards the coast of Japan."[16] The Columbus, (Wyman) and the Vincennes, (Paulding) sailed from the Chusan Islands on July 7, 1846,[17] the very day that Commodore John Drake Sloat hoisted the American Flag over California at Monterey,[18] during the Mexican War. These two vessels anchored in Yedo Bay on the 20th.[19] "Before reaching the anchorage" a Japanese Officer "with a Dutch interpreter," boarded the Columbus.

"He inquired what was my object in coming to Japan", reported Biddle.[16] He was informed that Biddle "came as a friend to ascertain whether Japan had, like China, opened her ports to foreign trade, and if she had, to fix by treaty the conditions on which American vessels should trade with Japan."[16] On request of the Japanese, this was reduced to writing and handed to them.[20] Upon anchoring, the two American war vessels were surrounded "by a vast number of boats belonging to the government" and the vessels were soon "thronged with Japanese."[16] All this was allowed in order to show a friendly disposition.[21] Biddle later ascertained these boats were present to prevent any communication with the shore.[16]

"Permission to land" was denied the Americans. "To my enquiry whether I would be allowed to go ashore" the Japanese officer "replied in the negative" reported Biddle.[16] The Japanese objected to our boats passing between the Columbus "and the Vincennes;" "but as I insisted upon it" the Japanese yielded, reported Biddle.[16]

On the following morning "an officer, apparently of high rank" boarded the Columbus. "He stated that foreign ships, upon entering a port of Japan, always landed their guns, muskets, swords, etc." but Biddle told"him it was impossible for us to do so."[16]

Biddle offered copies of the treaties with China but the Japanese refused to receive them.[16]

The Japanese informed Commodore Biddle that his letter

had been sent to the Emperor, at some distance from Yedo, and that an answer was expected in five or six days.[22] Not receiving a reply by the 25th Biddle expressed his surprise and requested that the Governor of Yedo be informed that he "desired an answer as early as possible."[16]

On July 27th a Japanese officer, accompanied by a suite of eight persons, carried the Japanese answer to the Columbus. In effect the reply was that the Japanese would only trade with the Chinese and the Dutch. "It wont be allowed that America make a treaty with Japan or trade with her, as the same is not allowed any other nation."[16] "Concerning strange lands, all things are fixed at Nagasaki, but not here in the Bay; therefore you must depart as quickly as possible and not come any more in Japan."[16]

Biddle learned that it had been the habit of the Japanese from time immemorial not to trade with foreigners. All nations were treated alike. It was admitted that the Japanese were different from other nations in this respect but every nation has a right to manage its affairs in its own way. The trading with the Dutch at Nagasaki was not to be taken as a precedent as it was only a small amount, with only a few of them, and of no importance. "The Emperor positively refuses the permission you desire," concluded the missive, and "earnestly advises you to depart immediately and to consult your own safety by not appearing again upon our coast."[23]

Biddle on this date had an "occurrence of an unpleasant

character." "I was requested to go on board the junk" to receive the "Emperor's letter." He refused at first insisting that the letter be delivered to him on board the Columbus. "To this the officer assented, but added that my letter having been delivered on board an American ship, he thought the Emperor's letter should be delivered on board the Japanese vessel." Biddle decided to gratify the Japanese and so informed the interpreter who went on board the junk. "At the moment I was stepping on board, a Japanese on the deck of the junk gave me a blow or push which threw me back into the boat!" Biddle returned to the Columbus and there received the letter and apologies.[16]

The Marines of the Columbus were commanded by Captain Henry B. Tyler, First Lieutenant Nathaniel Sheafe Waldron and Second Lieutenant John C. Cash. Those of the Vincennes were in charge of Orderly Sergeant Henry Larimer.[24]

And so Commodore Biddle's courteous invitation for friendly commercial intercourse was not accepted. Notwithstanding the prudence and discretion with which he had made the overture, he had failed to prevail on the Japanese to relax the system by which that Empire was closed to the trade of the Christian world, with the exception of the limited privileges acceded to the Dutch to send one or two small vessels annually from Batavia to Nagasaki. Our first squadron to visit Japan was treated with kindness and its wants supplied, but no one was permitted to land and to the offer

of friendly intercourse the unchangeable answer was - "Go away, and do not come back any more,"[25] reported the Secretary of the Navy.[25]

On the 29th of July the two American ships got underway and as the winds were light the Japanese boats towed them out.[26]

The wise conduct of Commander Biddle had much to do with the success of Commander James Glynn in 1849 and Commodore Matthew Calbraith Perry in 1853-1854. Biddle's able and tactful manner made a favorable impression upon the Japanese and he did all that he could accomplish under his limited orders.[27]

Information reached Commodore David Geisinger in 1849 that American seamen who had been ship-wrecked on the Japanese coast, were kept as prisoners in that country. He sent the Preble, (Commander James Glynn) to Nagasaki to demand their release.[28] The Marines of the Preble were in charge of Orderly Sergeant John Culp.[29]

The Preble sailed from Hong Kong on March 22, 1849 and reached Napa, Lew Chew Islands, April 10, 1849. She was the first American ship of war that ever visited these islands.[30] Nagasaki in Japan was reached on April 17, 1849.[31] A Japanese Officer visited the Preble and on the 19th Glynn demanded the shipwrecked sailors. The men were delivered up without waiting to send to Jedo and Glynn sailed on May 20, 1849 for Hong Kong.[32]

The Preble arrived at Honolulu on August 20, 1849, on her way to California. Twenty-one of her crew had died of dysen-

tery on the voyage, and forty-one were transferred to the "American Hospital," at Honolulu. Among those eighteen men on board the Preble, who had been prisoners in Japan, were seven Hawaiians, part of the crew of the Whaler Lagoda, who had been in prison for ten months in Japan.[33]

The Preble sailed in December, 1849 for San Francisco and arrived in New York on January 2, 1851.[34] Commander Glynn had the prestige of being the first American who had induced the Japanese to yield to foreign demands. The interest aroused in his narrative, and the publication in 1850 and 1851 of a full account of his visit, greatly aroused public interest in Japan. On June 10, 1851 Captain Glynn wrote a long letter to President Millard Fillmore on Japan.[34]

The Mexican War[35] brought California into the Union and the acquisition of the Magnificent Pacific Coast brought the United States closer to Asia. This nearer approach naturally suggested the advantage of cultivating a more intimate intercourse with Eastern nations, of which Japan was one.[36]

Early in May, 1851 Commodore John H. Aulick, who had been selected to succeed Commodore Philip F. Voorhees, as Commander-in-chief of the East India Squadron, and who was then preparing his flagship, the Susquehanna, for a voyage to China, proposed to Secretary of State Daniel Webster that the returning to their native land of several Japanese sailors who had been picked up at sea and had been brought to San Francisco might afford a favorable opportunity for est-

ablishing commercial relations with Japan. Mr. Webster was favorably impressed with Aulick's proposal and he at once brought it to the attention of President Fillmore, who after discussing it with the Cabinet, decided to establish a mission to Japan, to entrust it to Commodore Aulick as an envoy of the United States, and to empower him to negotiate a treaty with Japan. Aulick received a letter of credence dated May 30, 1851 from President Fillmore. His instructions from Webster were dated in June 1851, but he did not receive them until he reached his station for he sailed from Old Point Comfort on June 8, 1851.[37]

Commodore Aulick's squadron consisted of the Susquehanna Plymouth, and Saratoga. The Susquehanna was the first American Steam War Vessel to visit the Orient.[38]

On the outward voyage Commodore Aulick conveyed Chevalier S. de Macedo the Minister of Brazil to the United States Mr. Robert C. Schenck the United States Minister to Brazil, and Mr. J. S. Pendleton, Charge de Affaires to the Argentine Republic.[39]

Certain incidents occurring during this part of the outward voyage between these passengers and Commodore Aulick brought about his being relieved from this Japan Mission and Perry substituted.[40]

Daniel Webster, Secretary of State, in June, 1851 wrote instructions to Commodore John H. Aulick: "The moment is near when the last link in the chain of oceanic steam navigation

is to be formed. From China and the East Indies, to Egypt, thence through the Mediterranean and the Atlantic Ocean to England; thence again to our happy shores." Aulick was furnished with a letter of President Millard Fillmore dated May 10, 1851 to the Emperor of Japan. Aulick's instructions were to deliver the letter to "such of his high officers as he may appoint," and he had full power to negotiate a treaty.[41]

Aside from any pride at serving under Matthew Calbraith Perry during the period he unsealed and negotiated the first treaty with Japan, the Marines are quite interested in the following five matters that touch Japan: Major Jacob Zeilin, Perry's Fleet Marine Officer, was the second American of the Expedition to step ashore in Japan;[42] Private Robert Williams was the first American military man to be interred in Japanese soil; Private Jonathan Goble, one of the Marines attached to the U.S.S. Susquehanna, later invented and gave to the Japanese their first jin-ric-sha;[43] First Lieutenant Algernon S. Taylor was officially detailed to lead the first Japanese Embassy to America in 1860;[44] American Marines may have taken part in the inauguration of the first American Memorial Day in Japan.[45]

Brevet Brigadier General Commandant Archibald Henderson made special efforts to furnish Commodore Perry with efficient detachments of Marines.

Brevet Major Jacob Zeilin was selected by the General because of the "importance and interest," of the Japan Exped-

ition, because it required "officers of ability and experience to carry out the objects of its establishment," and that Major Zeilin was "well adapted for that service."[46]

On April 10, 1852, the "yard before the East Front of the Capitol presented" a "most lively scene, on the occasion of the public drill and exercise of the body of Marines" "shortly to be placed on board the national ships composing the Japanese Expedition. For upwards of an hour this fresh and fine looking body of men were marched and counter-marched divided, sub-divided, and reunited; walked, ran and halted; loaded, primed, and fired, to the gratification of some thousand citizens, of both sexes and all ages, the greater part of whom occupied the steps and portico on the east front presenting to the spectators' eyes a variegated object of even more gayety and interest than the soldiers themselves. The Marine Band attended, enlivening the business with several of their most spirit-stirring tunes".[47]

On March 24, 1852 Secretary of the Navy Graham ordered Perry to take command of the East India Squadron then consisting of the Susquehanna, Plymouth and Saratoga in China and to these were added the Mississippi, Princeton, and the Supply.[48]

The Supply sailed from New York in May, 1852. The Princeton and Mississippi were not ready until autumn when the Department decided to add the Vermont, Macedonian, Allegheny, Vandalia and the Southhampton.[49]

The Mississippi sailed from New York on October 23, 1852 for Annapolis where she expected to join the Princeton. This latter vessel developed boiler trouble, however and was replaced by the Powhatan.[50]

Before the Mississippi sailed from Annapolis President Fillmore, Secretary of the Navy Kennedy and other distinguished persons visited Commodore Perry on board that vessel, on November 8, 1852.[51] The Mississippi sailed from Norfolk alone for Japan on November 24, 1852.[52] She arrived at Madeira in 17 days.[53] Visited St. Helena, Cape of Good Hope, Mauritius, Ceylon and Singapore. Arrived in China on April 6, 1853 and the next day anchored at Hong Kong.[54] Here the Plymouth, Saratoga, and storeship Supply joined but the Susquehanna had gone to Shanghai.[55] The squadron rendezvoused at Shanghai. On May 23, 1853 Perry sailed for Lew Chew with the Mississippi, Susquehanna and Saratoga. The Plymouth was left at Shanghai as a "guard of American property and interests."[56] Napha, Lew Chew Islands was reached on May 26, 1853.[57]

When on May 28 the Regent visited the Susquehanna the band played "and the Marines drawn up in order." In the afternoon Major Zeilin went ashore "to see a level place where he could drill his Marines."[58] On May 30, 1853 a party of four officers, four of the crew and four Chinese coolies set out to explore the island under orders of Perry.[59] "Philip Smith, fireman" was in the party[60] which returned to the ship on June 4, 1853.[59]

The Regent visited Perry on the Susquehanna, on May 30, 1853.[61] The plan of Commodore Perry to return the visit of the regent of Lew Chew at the palace and nowhere else, had seemingly been agreed to but the Lew Chews did everything to get a return visit somewhere else. The Lew Chewan stratagem and device however failed to deceive the Commodore.[62]

Nine a.m. on June 6, 1853, was the time, and the point of landing was a little village of Tumai, about two miles from the Palace of Shui. "After all the other boats had gone the Commodore set out in his barge, and on his arrival, the Marines were found, under arms in line, under a grove of trees by the road-side, near the landing." The "Commodore with the Captain of the Fleet and Commanders Buchannan, Lee and Walker, then passed down the line of the Marines and artillerymen, when the procession was immediately formed." The band of the Mississippi was followed by "a company of Marines under command of Major Zeilin. The Commodore followed in a sedan chair."[62] "The Marines, with their bayoneted muskets and their gay dress of blue and white."[63] Next were the band of the Susquehanna, and a "company of Marines closed the procession, which in numbers amounted to some two hundred or more."[64] "The escort when landed at Tumai consisted of two companies of Marines in full dress, to whom for some purpose or other six rounds of ball cartridges had been issued per man," etc.[65]

"It was the 6th of June when an escort of about three

hundred officers, Marines and sailors conducted Commodore Perry to the capital of Lew Chew and received rather a grand entertainment from the dignitaries of the Island" wrote an officer on the Susquehanna. "We made some display with our thirty Naval uniforms, our forty musicians, our one hundred Marines and our two brass field pieces drawn by eighty sailors."[66]

The procession was back on board ship by half past two.[67] The Susquehanna got under way on June 9, 1853 for Bonin Islands,[68] leaving the Mississippi and Supply at Napha.[69] On June 15, 1853 a party from the Susquehanna explored Peel Island of the Bonin Islands.[70] Private John[71] "Smith a Marine", was a member of this party.[72]

The Susquehanna and Saratoga arrived at their anchorage at Napha on June 23, 1853, and found the Mississippi, Plymouth and Supply there.[73]

Commodore Perry invited the Regent and the Treasurer of Lew Chew to dine on board the Susquehanna on June 28, 1853, and the invitation was accepted. When the natives arrived on board "the Marines were under arms and the band played to give honor to their reception."[74]

On July 2, 1853 Perry sailed from Napha with the Susquehanna, Mississippi, Saratoga and Plymouth. The Supply was left at Napha and the Caprice was sent to Shanghai.[75]

The ships came to anchor off Uraga on July 8, 1853.[76] "The first approach to the Susquehanna from the shore was

that of a boat at early sunrise next morning", July 9, 1853.[77] The Governor visited the Susquehanna on July 13, 1853.[78]

July 14, 1853 opened with a sun that was somewhat obscured at early dawn. The Japanese had been working hard at the small village called Gorihama (Kurihama) just south of Uraga to build a "showy effect" with which to receive the Americans. "Steam was got up and the anchors were weighed, that the ships might be moved into a position where their guns would command the place of reception." The Officers, seamen, and Marines who were to go ashore were selected, "and as large a number of them mustered as could possibly be spared from the whole squadron." The "officers, as had been ordered, were in full official dress, while the sailors and Marines were in their naval and military uniforms of blue and white.[79]

Before eight bells in the morning watch had struck, the Susquehanna and Mississippi moved slowly down the bay.[80] Two boats approached as the steamers neared the opening of the bay and when the anchors were dropped they came alongside the Susquehanna. Kayama Yezaiman, with his two interpreters, came on board, followed immediately by Nagazima Saboroske, the sub-Governor of Uraga, who "had, in fact, very much the appearance of an unusually brilliant knave of trumps".[81]

A "signal was now hoisted from the Susquehanna as a summons for the boats from the other ships, and in the course of half an hour they had all pulled alongside with their various

officers, sailors, and Marines, detailed for the day's ceremonies." Fifteen launches and cutters composed the expedition. "Captain Buchanan having taken his place in his barge, led the way, flanked on either side by two Japanese boats containing the Governor and Vice Governor of Uraga with their respective suites." The rest of the ships' boats followed after in order.[82]

"The guides in the Japanese boats pointed to the landing place toward the center of the curved shore, where a temporary wharf had been built out from the beach by means of bags of sand and straw. The advance boat soon touched the spot, and Captain Buchanan, who commanded the party, sprang ashore, being the first of the Americans who landed in the Kingdom of Japan. He was immediately followed by Major Zeilin of the Marines,"[83] who was thus the second American of the Expedition to touch the shore of Japan.[83]

"The landing was done in fine order and with great promptitude, under the command of Major Zeilin of the Marine Corps."[84]

"The Marines (one hundred) marched up the wharf and formed into line on either side, facing the sea; then came the hundred sailors," the "whole number of Americans, including sailors, Marines, musicians, and officers, amounted to nearly three hundred."[85]

"When the boats had reached half-way to the shore the thirteen guns of the Susquehanna began to boom away and re-echo among the hills. This announced the departure of the

Commodore who, stepping into his barge, was rowed off to the land."[86]

"On the arrival of the Commodore, his suite of officers formed a double line along the landing place, and as he passed up between, they fell in order behind him." The procession then formed and marched toward the house of reception. "The Marines led the way, and the sailors following, the Commodore was duly escorted up the beach." On "either side of the Commodore marched a tall, well-formed Negro", "armed to the teeth, acted as his personal guard."[87] They were selected "for effect" on the Japanese.[87]

"The Commodore having been escorted to the door of the House of Reception, entered with his suite." Prince Toda of Idzu and Prince Ido of Iwami received Perry in the reception room.[88] Perry then presented President Fillmore's letter.[89]

The important part of the reply received by Perry was that "as this is not a place wherein to negotiate with foreigners, so neither can conferences nor entertainment be held. Therefore as the letter has been received you can depart."[90]

"After a silence of some few minutes, the Commodore directed his interpreters to inform the Japanese that he would leave, with the squadron, for Lew Chew and Canton in two or three days, and to offer to the government his services, if it wished to send any despatches or messages to those places." The "Commodore also stated that it was his intention to return

to Japan in the approaching Spring, perhaps in April or May."[91]

The interview lasted only twenty or thirty minutes[92] and the procession reforming as before, escorted the Commodore to the boat and all were soon aboard.[93]

The Governor of Uraga, Yezaimon, and Saborosko, with the interpreters returned on board the Susquehanna with Commodore Perry and were received by the Captains and the Commodore's aid in the upper cabin.[94] They left when the Susquehanna arrived off Uraga, where the Susquehanna, Mississippi, Plymouth and Saratoga, got in position.[95]

They dropped anchor at the "American Anchorage", ten miles distant from the first anchorage off Uraga, and a mile and a half from the shore. Commodore Perry here sent off another surveying expedition. Yezaimon soon appeared in a boat and boarding the Susquehanna demanded why Commodore Perry had anchored there. After a lot of palavering they left the ship and the following morning, July 15, 1853 the surveying party went out again.[96]

On that afternoon, Commodore Perry transferred his pennant to the Mississippi from the Susquehanna. "He then proceeded some ten miles up the bay toward Yedo and reached a point estimated to be distant twenty miles from the anchorage at Uraga." The Commodore believed that he had taken his ship within ten miles of Yedo.[97]

On July 16, 1853, the ships were moved to a bay about five miles distant from Uraga, which Perry named "Susquehanna

Bay",[98] where Governor Yezaimon again visited the Susquehanna.

The Squadron left Susquehanna Bay on Sunday, July 17, 1853.[99] The next day the Saratoga sailed with orders to proceed to Shanghai "to protect American life and property," and the Plymouth was ordered to Lew Chew.[100]

The Susquehanna and Mississippi arrived at Napha, Lew Chew Islands, on July 25, 1853, and found the Supply there.[101] On July 28, 1853, Perry and many Officers went ashore officially to visit the Regent and had dinner.[102] This visit was returned.

"After renting a coaling station of the Islanders"[103] Perry, on August 1, 1853, sailed for Hong Kong,[104] leaving the Plymouth at Lew Chew to keep alive the friendly interest. However she was directed to run over to the Bonin Islands, after the end of the hurricane season, to survey and visit the settlement at Port Lloyd,[105] also to survey the Coffin Group,[105] "and take possession of them in behalf of the United States,"[106] which was done on October 30, 1853 "at Newport, Hillsborough Island, by hoisting the United States Flag, firing a salute of seventeen guns, and burying a copper plate and bottle."[107]

"I am now returning to China after a second visit to the port of Napa and the Bay of Yedo, under very different circumstances from the first visit made to those places sixteen years ago,"[108] wrote an officer of the Susquehanna.

On the second evening after leaving Napha, Lew Chew

Islands, the Susquehanna and Mississippi fell in with the Vandalia that had sailed from Philadelphia on March 5, 1853. The Marine Officer of the Vandalia was Second Lieutenant Jacob Read. The squadron arrived at Hong Kong, China, on August 7, 1853,[109] and the Vandalia on August 7, 1853.[109]

The Taiping Rebellion, then raging in China, added to Commodore Perry's responsibilities;[110] but they will be described in another chapter.[111]

Perry occupied a house ashore at Cumsing-moon,[112] a port lying between Hong Kong and Macao.[113] Before leaving Canton, Commodore Perry chartered the steamboat Queen and manned her with bluejackets and Marines from the Squadron.[114]

In November, 1853 the French frigate Constantine suddenly left Macao under sealed orders and about the same time a Russian squadron arrived at Shanghai, having lately visited Nagasaki.[115]

These movements aroused Perry's suspicions and believing that they might possibly proceed to Japan and ruin his plans, he decided to move at once.[115]

He sailed on the Susquehanna from Hong Kong on January 14, 1854, for Lew Chew in company with the Powhatan, Mississippi and storeships Lexington and Southampton.[116] The Macedonian and Supply had already sailed a few days prior for Lew Chew to join the Vandalia.[117]

At the very minute of sailing from Hong Kong, Perry received orders to detach one of his steamers and place her at

the disposal of Robert M. McLane, recently appointed Commissioner to China, but Commodore Perry decided to wait until after he had made his demonstration in Yedo Bay to obey these orders.[117] The Squadron arrived at Napha on January 20, 1854, where were found the Macedonian, Vandalia and Supply, but the Saratoga had not arrived.[118]

"Early this morning [February 1] the Marines were sent ashore under Captain Slack's order to drill." Mr. S. Wells Williams, Perry's interpreter, later went ashore and "met the Marines near the bridge," and "went up to Shui with them." As they neared the capital "the music and arms of the men attracted attention and the people came running out to see the show."[119]

On February 3, 1854, Perry "accompanied by a military guard and a suite of officers" was received with the same formal ceremonies as before by the Regent in his royal palace.[120] Exploring parties were also sent out.[121]

The Macedonian sailed from Napha, Lew Chew, on February 1, 1854, for Yedo Bay, in company with the Vandalia, Lexington, and SouthAmpton.[122] Commodore Perry followed on February 7, 1854, with the Susquehanna, Powhatan and Mississippi[122] The Storeship Supply sailed February 8, 1854, for Shanghai for supplies with orders to join the Squadron at Yedo Bay.[122] Just before leaving Napha Perry heard of the death of the Japanese Emperor.[123] The Saratoga joined the squadron the first day out. On entering, the outer Bay of Yedo (or Gulf

of Yedo) on February 11, 1854, the steamers encountered a severe blow from northward and eastward and anchored during that night under the lee of Great Island.[124]

The steamers stood up the bay on the morning of February 12, 1854, and as they approached land they saw the Macedonian and Vandalia, the former being aground in the bight of Kawatsu, near Kamakura. The Lexington joined later in the day and the Southampton was also present.[125] The Macedonian got off. On February 13, 1854, the Squadron moved up the Bay of Yedo, the Susquehanna, Powhatan and Mississippi towing the Lexington, Vandalia and Macedonian.[126] The Southampton had preceded the squadron.[126]

Commodore Perry now had with him the Susquehanna, Powhatan, Mississippi, Lexington, Vandalia, Macedonian and Southampton, all anchored at the "American Anchorage,"[126] which was about twelve miles from the town of Uraga and about twenty miles from the capital city Yedo.[127] Two Subordinate officials appeared and Perry would not receive them but permitted Captain Adams to do so on the Powhatan. They brought the message that the Japanese wanted to receive them at Uraga and not at Yedo. Captain Adams informed them that the Commodore would not go to Uraga. The Japanese officials stated that the Emperor had appointed that place for the meeting. Captain Adams informed them that the Commodore was willing to meet the Japanese on the shore opposite where the Squadron was at the time and if not there, he would move on up to Yedo.[127]

The next day, February 14, 1854, the Japanese came back and announced Kama-kura as the meeting place. This was about twenty miles below Uraga where the Macedonian had grounded. Captain Adams, speaking for the Commodore, said that that was not satisfactory.[128]

The Japanese asked, that as Commodore Perry was willing to deliver the President's letter at Gorahama, near Uraga, why should he object to receiving an answer there?[129]

On February 18, 1854, the Japanese told Captain Adams that the high officer had arrived at Uraga and that they had been sent to request the Commodore to meet him there. Commodore Perry refused but wrote a letter saying that Captain Adams would meet a person appointed by the Japanese Chief Commissioner ashore near where they were, to decide when and where the Commodore would meet the Commissioners and that he must know by "Tuesday next."[130]

Commodore Perry transferred his pennant to the Powhatan on February 18, 1854.[131] More negotiations as to the place occurred and Perry refused to meet them anywhere but at Yedo.[132]

On February 21, 1854, the Vandalia with the Japanese and Captain Adams moved down to Uraga,[132] where Commander Henry A. Adams and his party landed on February 22, 1854 - Washington' Birthday.[133]

While the Vandalia was firing a salute for Washington's Birthday at noon, the party under Captain Adams "accompanied by a score of officers and attendants," "landed at Uraga."[133]

He was received by Hayashi, Prince of Daigaku. Captain Adams handed Perry's letter to the Prince,[134] and after this interview it was agreed upon that Commodore Perry should receive an answer in three days.[135]

The answer was received on February 24, 1854, and the Vandalia sailed to rejoin Perry.[136] During this time Perry moved his ships up to where he could see Yedo from his Masthead.[136] The squadron was now anchored off Kanagawa and on February 25, 1854 the Vandalia arrived. Commander Adams gave Commodore Perry the answer,[136] which was that Uraga had to be the spot; but Keyama Yezaiman, Governor of Uraga, arrived almost after Perry had read the letter and suggested that the meeting take place opposite to where the ships then were - at the village of Yokuhama.[137] So after all the palaver and delay the Japanese finally agreed to Commodore Perry's demand. The Saratoga arrived on March 4, 1854.[138] March 8, 1854 was appointed as the meeting day.[139] Perry issued orders that included the following:

"On the first landing of the Commodore to meet the Japanese Commissioners, he will be escorted by all the Marines of the Squadron, who can be spared from duty," and that "Major Zeilin will make the necessary arrangement." "All boat-guns to be mounted and ammunition in boats."[140]

"Yezaimon and his party" arrived "on board about ten o'clock to conduct the party ashore, and amused themselves with the sailors and looking at the gay dresses of the

Marines."[141] At half-past eleven o'clock the escort, "consisting of about five hundred Officers, Seamen and Marines, fully armed, embarked in twenty-seven barges, in command of Commander Buchanan,"[142] and pulled for the shore.

"When the escort had landed, the Marines were drawn up in a hollow square, leaving a wide open space between them, while the naval officers remained in a group at the wharf." The Commodore on landing from the Powhatan "was received by the group of officers, who, falling into a line, followed him. The bands now struck up a lively tune, and the Marines, whose orderly ranks in complete military appointment, with their blue and white uniforms, and glistening bayonets, made quite a martial and effective show, presented arms as the Commodore, followed in procession by his immediate staff"proceeded up the shore.[143]

An officer attached to Perry's Squadron wrote that "the escort of the Commodore consisted of a large number of officers, seamen and Marines of the Squadron, numbering about 530 souls and occupying twenty-seven boats all armed and equipped."[144]

Two days before this conference Private Robert Williams,[145] a Marine belonging to the Mississippi, died on March 6, 1854. The subject of interring the remains of Private Williams in Japanese soil came up at the conference.[146]

Commodore Perry proposed that a piece of ground be purchased from the Japanese for the burial of Private Williams'

body and for any other American who might die. This proposition perplexed the Japanese Commissioners. They retired to consider it. Returning they informed Commodore Perry that as a temple had been set aside at Nagasaki for the interment of strangers, it would be necessary to send the body to Uraga, whence, at a convenient season, it might be conveyed in a Japanese junk to the former place. To this the Commodore objected since as he said "undisturbed resting places for the dead were granted by all nations."[147] Perry then proposed to send boats and inter the body at Webster Island, a "small island lying convenient" to the "American Anchorage." After considerable discussion the Japanese commissioners "finally consented to allow the burial to take place at Yoku-hama, at a place adjoining one of their temples, and in view of the squadron. They also stated that an official would go on board the Mississippi and be present at the funeral so that no Japanese would interfere.[148]

Many officers requested permission to attend the funeral but they were refused as it was thought best not to give the occasion any "unusual eclat, while at the same time nothing was to be omitted."

About three o'clock after "all-hands" had been called t "bury the dead," and the Chaplain had read the scripture, th funeral party left the Mississippi. Two boats were used. "The first carried Captain William B. Slack of the Marine Corps, the Chaplain and the Surgeon." The other boat carric

the "dead body, with a guard of honor, consisting of a Corporal and six Marines." The Mayor of Uraga received the party as it landed, and actually shook hands with the Americans. "The Marines were formed in line and received the body with presented arms, when the procession was formed and moved on; Marines with reversed arms; fife and muffled-drum playing the Dead March; the Chaplain; coffin borne by four Marines;" Captain Slack; the Surgeon; hospital-steward, and six or eight sailors. The route "led quite through the village, at the further end of which, on a wooded hill" was a "temple with two different flights of steps leading up to it, and ornamented gate-ways below." A Buddhist priest was on hand. The place of the interment "was a very pretty spot about two hundred yards from the village and closely adjoining an old burying-ground" of the Japanese. The "Marines stood in line" and "near them on a mat sat the old Buddhist priest, with a little table before him, on which were a number of papers," with "incense burning in their midst." The Protestant-Episcopal service was held and "then the Marines fired three volleys over the grave."[149] This was "the first breaking through of the Japanese settled opposition to Christianity."

The Buddhist priest was offically present to honor Private Williams and on his table in addition to the incense-box were "some rolls of unknown material and paper, were also a bowl of cooked rice, a covered vessel filled with saki, and a small gong." The priest went through his Japanese ceremonies

for the dead. Private Williams thus had a unique funeral eve for a Marine.[150]

After putting head and foot boards with inscription on the grave and covering it in the usual manner, the party left "the Buddhist priest still engaged at his ceremonies, and set out" on their return to the ship with "drum and fife playing."[151]

"A neat enclosure of bamboo was subsequently put up abou the American grave by the authorities, and a small hut was erected near, for a Japanese guard to watch the grave for a time according to their custom."[152]

After the interview the Commodore prepared to depart. He "passed out followed by his suite and procession of officers as before, and marching down, to the msuic of the bands, between the files of Marines on either side, embarked in his barge and pulled for the ship. The other boats soon followed, filled with the numerous officers, sailors, Marines and others who had shared in the ceremonies of the day."[153]

The Imperial reply was received on March 9, 1854 and March 13, 1854 was appointed as the day for the receipt of presents.[154] "The presents filled several large boats, which left the ship escorted by a number of officers, a company of Marines and a Band of Music."[155]

Commander Henry A. Adams, the Captain of the Fleet, issued General Order No. 16, on March 14, 1854 "By Order of the Commander-in-Chief," directing that: "A Marine Officer will be sent on shore every day at the building adjoining

Yokohama where the Engineers and Mechanics of the Squadron are employed. He will be attended by four orderlies wearing side-arms, & his duty will be to prevent any intrusion by the officers or men into the new building, or the houses of the people; to see that the work going on is not neglected nor the persons employed at it, allowed to wander away from the vicinity. Strict orders must be given that the men are not to leave the boat when they land. A disregard of this order will not be overlooked. The order forbidding intercourse with the shore, or the admittance of Japanese on board the ships for any purpose whatever, unless by permission of the Commodore is to be strictly observed."[156]

On March 17, 1854 "The Commodore, accompanied by his interpreters, secretary and two or three of his officers, met the Commissioners at the Treaty House and after some preliminary compliments," proceeded to the "Hall of Reception" and from there to the "Inner Room of Conference." The Commodore on this occasion dispensed with all military display,[157] according to Hawks[157] but S. Wells Williams, an eye-witness wrote that he "was received on shore by the Marines and an escort with music."[157]

Demands and replies received. A promise was made that a reply would be received March 23, 1854. The Vandalia and Southampton were despatched to Simoda on March 20, 1854.[158] The Japanese kept their promise and the answers were received on March 23, 1854.

On March 24, 1854 Perry went ashore at Yoku-hama to receive the gifts from the Japanese.[159]

After they were received and the Japanese had entertained their guests the Americans returned the courtesy. "A detachment of Marines from the Squadron were put through their various evolutions, drills, etc., while the bands furnished martial music. The Japanese Commissioners seemed to take a very great interest in this military display, and expressed themselves much gratified at the soldierly air and excellent discipline of the men." After this drill the Americans went back to their ships.[159]

On March 27, 1854 after first visiting the Macedonian the Commissioners were entertained on board the flagship Powhatan. The feature of this entertainment were the Negro minstrels after the dinner.[160]

On March 28, 1854 Perry landed to talk over a few points before signing the treaty which took place on March 31, 1854 at the Treaty House.[161]

First Lieutenant Samuel H. Jones in charge of three of his Marines and Engineer Gay with his men left the Mississippi on March 29, 1854 "for Yokohama on duty."[162]

The signing of the treaty was celebrated with a dinner ashore in a large reception hall.[163]

The Treaty of Peace, Commerce and Navigation, signed at Kanagawa, March 31st, 1854, provided, in part, as follows: Peace and friendship; Ports of Shimoda and Hakodate open to

American trade and necessary provisions to be supplied them; relief to shipwrecked people and expenses thereof not to be refunded; Americans to be free as in other countries, but amenable to just laws; Americans at Shimoda and Hakodate not to be subject to restrictions and free to go about within defined limits; careful deliberation in transacting business which affects the welfare of either party; trade in open ports subject to local regulations; wood, water, provisions, coal, etc., to be procured through Japanese officers only; most-favored nation clause; U.S. ships restricted to ports of Shimoda and Hakodate, except when forced by stress of weather; U.S. Consul or agents to reside at Shimoda; ratifications to be exchanged within eighteen months.[163]

Commodore Perry, on March 14, 1854 on board the Powhatan off Yedo wrote Brevet Major Jacob Zeilin enclosing a copy of the "medical survey" in his case and informed him that in conformity with the medical survey he was detached and directed to report to the commanding officer of the Saratoga for passage to the United States. "Wishing you a speedy restoration to health and a happy meeting with your family and friends," were Perry's concluding words.[164]

The Saratoga sailed on April 4, 1854 for the Hawaiian Islands and Washington, but the wind being unfavorable she anchored and sailed the next day.[165]

Major Zeilin was transferred to the Saratoga from the Susquehanna, Captain William B. Slack from the Mississippi to

the Susquehanna, and Lieutenant James H. Jones joined the Mississippi from the Macedonian all on March 18, 1854.[166]

Commander Henry A. Adams was "bearer of the treaty" to the United States, and also sailed on the Saratoga.[167]

On April 18, 1854 Perry got underway for Shimoda on the Powhatan, accompanied by the Mississippi, and achoring there the same day,[168] found the Vandalia, Southampton, Supply and Lexington already there.[169] On April 25 two Japanese requested Perry to take them to the United States but Perry declined to receive them unless they had previous permission from their rulers to do so.[170]

The Macedonian arrived at Shimoda on May 2, 1854 "with a very welcome supply of fine turtles."[171]

On May 4, 1854 the Lexington was despatched for Lew Chew Two days later the Macedonian, Vandalia, and Southampton sailed for Hakodadi.[172]

Three officers went ashore to amuse themselves in the vicinity of Shimoda with their fowling pieces, and after a day's shooting, which was prolonged to a late hour, they took themselves to a temple as a resting place. They decided to sleep there in the lodging apartment connected with the monastery, as it was late. Commodore Perry had been informed that these temples were at his disposal for such a purpose but despite such assurance the officers had courteously inquired of the interpreter, who informed them that there would be no criticism. The officers had scarcely retired when

Japanese soldiers rudely entered and insisted that they return to their ship.[173]

The Japanese interpreter and another official finding that their appeals were ignored left with intention of seeing the Commodore. In their absence the soldiers became ruder than ever. The officers cocked their revolvers which caused the soldiers to act more respectful. The Commodore's first impulse "was to despatch a guard of Marines on shore to arrest the Japanese officials who had been guilty, but, upon reflection, he determined to send his Lieutenant to call upon the Prefect to lay before him the facts of the outrage and to insist upon the fullest explanation and apology."[174] The result was that after evasion, an apology was received from the Prefect.[175]

Commodore Perry in the Powhatan and the Mississippi sailed for Hakodade in May,[175] the Supply being left at Shimoda.[17] They anchored on May 17, 1854 at Hakodade.[177]

On the afternoon of May 19, 1854 the Commodore having shifted his flag temporarily to the Mississippi, received on board, the Matsmai Kangsayu the great officer of the family of the Prince of Matsmai, who was to meet Perry on behalf of his superior,[178] and on the following day Commodore Perry went ashore to call upon Kangsayu.[179]

On May 31 "an effort was made to get a block of stone here (Hakodade) to take to Washington for the monument, which block Perry wishes to exchange for a map of that city," wrote

S. Wells Williams.[180] It was received on board the Powhatan on June 2.[180]

The Macedonian sailed for Shimoda and the Vandalia for Shanghai on May 31. The steamers remained at Hakodade to await the arrival of the persons who the Commissioners promised to send there to meet the Americans. On June 1, 1854[181] the Commodore received a communication that the Commissioners would soon be there[182] and they finally did arrive.

On June 3, 1854 the Mississippi and Powhatan sailed for Shimoda where they arrived on June 7, 1854.[183] The Vandalia and Supply were at Shimoda. On June 8, 1854 Perry went ashore for a conference with the Japanese Commissioners,[184] "with the usual formal compliments," at the Temple.[185] "Before leaving the Temple the Marines were marched and drilled, and the manner of using the field-pieces shown, greatly to the satisfaction of the Japanese."[186] Another conference was held on the next day.

While the Japanese jin-rik-sha was not invented in Japan for some years later then this expedition, nevertheless, it had its indirect conception at this time.

"Sentaro - better known by his American nick-name Sam Patch - was one of several unfortunates, who, while manning a junk, were blown to sea, rescued by an American vessel and taken to San Francisco." Sam Patch joined the Perry Squadron. "All the while they sailed, he was apprehending that some ill-luck would befall his neck and was constantly repeating

Shimpai! Shimpai! (Japanese word for "troubled in mind"), showing with what fear and trembling he came once more to take a glance at his native land."[187] Sam won the good will of all. Everybody "pitied his misfortunes, and one of the Marines, named Jonathan Goble, a religious man, had taken a special interest in him; finding in his docility and intelligence, promise of good fruit from a properly directed religious training, Goble had begun with him a system of instruction which he hoped would not only make the Japanese a fair English scholar, but a faithful Christian. Sam came to the United States in the Mississippi, and accompanied his benefactor to his home in the interior of New York."[188] Goble planned to make Sam Patch an assistant so that when he returned to Japan as a missionary he would help him Christianize the Japanese.

The Japanese made efforts to secure Sam and Commodore Perry stated that he was willing, if Sam was, but all the eloquence and persuasiveness of the Japanese were insufficient to induce him to leave the ship.[189]

"To an American," this same Jonathan Goble, is due most probably, wrote Inazo Nitobe, "an invention for which many Japanese may be temporarily thankful. The idea of an enlarged perambulator was suggested" by Mr. Goble, the one time Marine, who had returned to Japan as a missionary, and "his thought matured in the so-called 'man-power carriage' (jin-rik-sha), first used in 1867 or 1868."[189]

A sergeant and a corporal were sent from Shimoda to

Yokohama on a Japanese junk "for the remains of one of the Marines of the Mississippi, with ten days provisions for ten men."[190]

A concert was held in honor of the Japanese aboard the Mississippi by the minstrels on June 13.[191]

Commodore Perry transferred his broad pennant back to the Mississippi from the Powhatan on June 18.[192]

When he paid his farewell to the Commissioners at Shimoda he had ashore the Marines etc. On June 28, 1854 the whole Squadron got underway but the wind shifting the Macedonian and Supply had to anchor. Perry ordered them to anchor safely in a safe berth and go to Keelung on the Island of Formosa when it was safe to do so. The Mississippi and the Powhatan sailed with the Southampton in tow. The Mississippi and Powhatan anchored at Napha on July 1, 1854, the Southampton being dropped off and ordered to Hong Kong.[193]

The Susquehanna had been sent on March 24, 1854 (just one week before the treaty was signed) to place itself at the disposal of Mr. McLane. The Vandalia had been ordered from Hakodadi to Shanghai.[194] The Plymouth had been left at Shanghai to protect American interests.[195]

At Napa the first news to reach Perry was regarding the murder of a seaman of the Lexington named William Boardman on June 19 and the injuries of another named Scott, at the market place at Napa.[196]

"Fourth of July was kept by firing a salute of seventeen

guns from each steamer, by reading the Declaration of Independence, singing a song, music by the Bands, and the best dinners which the larders afforded." In the "moonlight evening our ship's company was entertained by the singing of minstrels," wrote S. Wells Williams.[197]

Mr. Williams, on July 6, wrote, with reference to the Boardman murder: "I think it would have been well to have landed a party of Marines at the Ame-ku-dera to show that he was not inclined to longer delay and when he set a limited time he meant to adhere to it. However, it was not till after dinner today that he gave orders to Captain Tansill to go ashore with twenty Marines and take possession of the Temple and Yard at Tumai, allowing no natives to enter or remain within the precincts." The Regent was informed that some "Marines had been landed."[198] The matter was settled on the 7th.

On July 8, 1854 the aides of Commodore Perry conferred with the Lewchewan Regent, and discussed a rough draft of a treaty, the preamble of which "recognized Lew Chew as an independent nation."[199] The Regent objected to this as he knew trouble with China would ensue.[200] Other interviews followed. In the meantime an effort was made to secure a bell to place on top of the Washington monument.[201] The Log of the Powhatan for July 9, 1854, notes that Brevet Captain Robert Tansill was detached from that ship to the Mississippi, and First Lieutenant James H. Jones, reported on board for duty. On July 11, 1854 Commodore Perry landed at noon "with a small

escort of Marines,"[202] and visited the "Regent at the Town Hall,"[203] and a compact or treaty was signed,[204] after which "a handsome entertainment, furnished by the Lew Chew authorities," followed. "On the evening of July 14, 1854, Perry gave a parting entertainment on board his ship to the authorities of Lew Chew."[205] On July 15, 1854 the Lexington sailed for Hong Kong. On the 17th Perry left in the Mississippi accompanied by the Powhatan.[206] The Mississippi went direct to Hong Kong but the Powhatan visited Ning-po-fu, Fuh-chow-fuh and Amoy in China, "to inquire into the interests of Americans resident in those places,"[207] and from the last port to Hong Kong.

When Perry started home on the Ganges his crew gave him a testimonial dated July 31, 1854 which was signed by a number of Chief Petty Officers and "In behalf of the Marine Guard, Sergeant Kearns" [James Carnes][207]

On the 18th of September [1854] the steam-frigate Susquehanna again appeared at Simoda, on her way home, via the Sandwich Islands followed on the 21st, by the Mississippi; three days after which the Susquehanna left, and the Mississippi on the 1st of October. The reception given to the officers of both ships was very cordial, and their intercourse both with officials and townspeople was almost entirely free from any marks of that restraint and apparent suspicion exhibited on former occasions. Besides an interchange of visits and dinners, several Japanese officials attended, on a Sunday, divine service on board the Susquehanna.[208] "There are a

number of Temples near Simoda," wrote an officer of the Susquehanna, "and attached to each is a graveyard. At one of these, situated near a village, there is a place set apart for Americans. Here Dr. Hamilton was buried, being laid by the side of two others who had died on the second visit of the ships. Each grave has its appropriate stone, as with us, and by many of them are evergreens set in vase, or joints of bamboo, containing water. Cups of fresh water are also set by the graves, and to these, birds of dazzling plumage and delightful song come and drink. The graves of the Americans were not forgotten."[208]

Commander Henry A. Adams who had carried the Perry Treaty back to Washington was detailed by Secretary James C. Dobbin for duty with the Department of State for the mission of exchanging ratifications of that treaty with the Japanese. He arrived at Shimoda on board the U.S. Steamer Powhatan, Commander William J. McCluney, in February of 1855 and on the 21st of that month the ratifications were duly exchanged.[209] The Marines of the Powhatan commanded by First Lieutenant James H. Jones, rendered honors to the Japanese Commissioners when they arrived on board the Powhatan on February 21 and when they departed on the same day.[209]

Lieutenant John Rodgers succeeded Commander Cadwalader Ringgold in command of the Surveying Expedition in 1854.[210] The orders dated February 28, 1853 to the Expedition included: "The propriety of examining the Sea of Japan" will "receive

due attention."[211]

Rodgers anchored on the Vincennes at the Bonin Islands on October 19, 1854 where on Peel Island he found thirty inhabitants of which "eight are white and twenty-two Sandwich Islanders."[212] The Marines of the Vincennes were in charge of Orderly Sergeant James McDonough.[213]

The Vincennes arrived at Loo Choo (Lew Chew) on November 16, 1854. Lieutenant John Rodgers was soon convinced that the Loo Chooans "were inclined to take little notice of the Vincennes" or to observe the terms of Perry's Treaty, so he requested an audience with the Regent. The audience was held in the Court House at Napa. Lieutenant Rodgers and as many of his officers as could be spared attended, "accompanied by nearly the whole Guard of Marines." The results of the audience were unsatisfactory Rodgers reporting that "their whole plea I looked upon as a manifest evasion." Finally in order to secure a supply of wood, to be paid for of course, Rodgers was forced to issue this ultimatum: "If the wood were not furnished in twenty-four hours I should take an armed force with a field-piece up to the Palace and learn from the Regent why he infringed" the Convention of Commodore Perry. "They apparently took me for an Oriental and supposed I did not necessarily mean what I said," reported Rodgers. "The wood did not come, and I accordingly landed about one hundred men, Officers, sailors, and Marines, all armed, and with one of Dahlgren's field-pieces, marched up to the Palace at

Shoudi. They said the young King would die of fright at the sight of so many armed men, the reply was obvious; that it was to be hoped he would learn to make his Mandarins observe the Treaty." The crowds of Loo Chooans watching the Marines and Sailors "took it for an honor, for a tributary offering possibly."[214]

Lieutenant Rodgers entered the Palace and was informed by the Interpreter, Tcher-a-chi-chi, "that the Regent had gone about twenty miles into the country the evening before and that he could not receive" Rodgers; but "that the Pu-ching kwan, next in rank to him, would do so with the Tafung-hwan, Governor of Napa." Rodgers agreed, and the wood was promised as well as some other concessions; but "Loo Choo Man no want a Consul." "Sacki [sake], tea and cakes were served" to the officers. After the audience held an entertainment for the officers "and to the sailors and Marines they gave tea." The entire party returned to the ship about sunset. The wood was supplied.[214]

In the Spring of 1855 the Surveying Expedition began its most important work, a survey of the water of Japan and the North Pacific Ocean. From Napa on Lew Chew Island, the Fenimore Cooper sailed up the west coast of Japan; and the Vincennes and John Hancock, the east coast. The Vincennes "anchored in Kago Sima Bay, off the town of Tamagawa" on December 28, 1854. Lieutenant Rodgers reported: "once when the boat was sent on shore to observe, as usual, a number of men

with two swords, came and formed a cordon around her, while one, more forward than the rest, attempted to shove her off. The bowman, who had laid in his oar and taken his boat hook as usual at landing, without any orders, struck the Japanese on the head. He partly slipped and partly fell into the water. All his Japanese companions laughed loudly." The boat returned to the Vincennes and Rodgers "sent her back immediately fully armed. The Japanese gave way. The quite threat had carried our point, and we did not take arms ashore again."[215]

On January 9, 1855, the Vincennes anchored off the southern extremity of the Island of Tanega Sima. The natives were very kind and helpful. On January 18, 1855 the vessel "anchored at Harbor, Bungalow, or Kikay, Island," where the people were more sophisticated. Lieutenant Rodgers landed and the people armed with spears and match-locks, tried to stop his boat's crew from following him. One Japanese drew a knife on the party. Rodgers carefully exhibited his "small revolver" to the Japanese, who "shuddered," and no further interference was encountered.[215]

The Vincennes anchored in the Bay of Sima - U, Island of Ousima, on January 21, 1855. Here, again, Rodgers was forced to show his pistol before being allowed to work ashore on the survey unmolested; he wrote to the Secretary of the Navy - "I have come to the conclusion that the Government would not be unwilling I should risk a collision with the

Japanese in endeavoring to carry out our right. The trade is desirable, but the survey is a necessity. Under the circumstances it appears to me a 'perfect right'."[215]

"We found upon our arrival in Simoda ten Americans residing in the Temple of Yokushen, five gentlemen, three ladies, and two children," reported Rodgers.[216] The men had arrived in Japan to earn a living as purveyors for whaling ships. The Governor of Shimoda refused them residence on the ground that the Perry Treaty did not grant them that privilege.[216] The same conditions presented themselves at Hakodade and the little party finally returned to San Francisco.[216]

"We reached the Bonin Islands" on Oct. 19, 1854, reported Lieutenant Rodgers. "It rather appears to me that the Bonin Islands are not very important to our commerce. I think they will be found to be inside the ellipse formed by the tracks of our vessels in the trade between China and our Pacific States." The "inhabitants of Peel Island are thirty in number, of these eight are white and twenty-two Sandwich Islanders."[217]

In accordance with the provisions of the treaty Townsend Harris was named for American Consul-General to be stationed at Shimoda, Japan.[218] He was appointed in 1855.

Leaving New York on October 17, 1855 Mr. Harris arrived in London on the 29th, where he boarded a merchant-vessel for the Far East, and eventually joined the U.S. Steam Frigate San Jacinto at Penang (Pinang or Pulo-Penang).

The San Jacinto, flying the pendant of Commodore James Armstrong, sailed from New York on October 25, 1855,[219] with the expectation of picking up Mr. Harris enroute.[220]

The Marine Guard of the San Jacinto was commanded by Second Lieutenant Henry B. Tyler.[221]

An officer on board wrote that "on two successive Sundays [before sailing] we had first an undress and then a full-dress uniform muster,"[222] while "at our first Sunday morning muster we had read to us the Articles of War in all their thundering terrors."[223] In sixteen days we arrived at Madeira.[224] Dropped anchor at the Cape of Good Hope, Simon's Bay on January 12, 1856,[225] and arrived at Mauritius on February 14, 1856,[226] after stopping at "the pretty walled and embowered town of Galle" in Ceylon the San Jacinto sailed for Penang.[227]

From Point de Galle the destination of the San Jacinto was the Paradise of the East, to Pulo-Pinang in the Straits of Malacca. On the evening of March 18, 1856 the San Jacinto made the south end of Nicobar and on the evening of the 20th passed Pulo-Rondo. On the morning of the 21st the rocky islet of Pera was close aboard. That same night the dark mountain island of Pulo-Pinang, with heavy clouds resting on its summit, was picked up. Anchoring over night the San Jacinto went into the harbor on the morning of March 22, 1856.[228] The San Jacinto arrived at Penang on March 22, 1856 after 149 days out from New York. "Consul General Harris is here and he will embark on board the San Jacinto" as soon as we are

ready to proceed, reported Commodore Armstrong.[229] Mr. Harris had reached this city on January 19, 1856 where he waited no fewer than seventy-six days for the San Jacinto.[230]

Embarking on board the San Jacinto on April 2, 1856[231] Townsend Harris, after visiting Singapore and Hong Kong sailed from the latter port on August 12, 1856[232] and arrived at Shimoda, Japan on August 21, 1856.[233]

On August 25, 1856 the respect of the Japanese for Harris was increased when, upon going ashore "accompanied by Captain Bell and some ten others," a "salute of thirteen guns was fired, waking up the grandest echoes among the hills."[234]

"They were greatly agitated when I mentioned the going up to Yedo," wrote Harris in his Journal on August 27, 1856. Harris expended a long time making the Japanese see that he simply had to go to Yedo.[235]

On September 2, 1856 "the new Governor and the old and the Vice-Governor, our Yedo friend, and a large suite came on board [the San Jacinto] at Ten a.m. Men were exercised at the guns, and went through all the maneuvers of an action, Marines were put through the manual and marching etc. and a salute was fired. Then to table, and their performances in the way of eating and drinking were noteworthy. What was not eaten was carried away."[236] This was in good form, for a Japanese proverb is "Leavings are lucky," and the capacious sleeve of the old-fashioned haori served the polite purposes well.

Townsend Harris left the San Jacinto for his long stay on shore on September 3, 1856. As he left the ship the crew manned the rigging and gave him three hearty cheers. "Through surf, and then the band on the quarterdeck struck up Hail Columbia," wrote Harris.[237]

Before the San Jacinto sailed on September 4, 1856,[238] Mr. Harris wrote Commodore Armstrong: "I feel that my position in Japan has received much importance in the eyes of the Japanese authorities for the handsome manner in which I was attended when I made my official visit to the Governor."[239] Commodore Armstrong reported to the Secretary of the Navy that "on our departure from Simoda," on September 4, 1856, "the American Flag was flying on the Consular Flag Staff on shore."[240]

The San Jacinto arrived at Shanghai on September 13, 1856 in "seven days from Simoda, Japan." She was "detained one day at Woo-Sung by the Pilot having run the Ship on a mud bank." Commodore Armstrong found the Levant at Shanghai she having brought U.S. Commissioner Peter Parker to China to that city.[241]

The Japanese even now in 1856, after the Treaty of Perry had been accepted did everything to evade opening up. "The apparition of Perry's Fleet had indeed been a nightmare; yet even with two ports open to the ugly and hairy foreigners, was it not possible to keep things as they were? Could not the aliens' eyes be blinked, the veil be kept over Kioto, and the Mikado still afloat on purple clouds as the 'spiritual' emperor only, and the mystery-play be continued? That was

the plan of the Japanese."[242]

On April 27, 1857, Harris wrote in his Journal that the "Rhododendron Althea is now in beautiful flower, - colors chiefly pink. I have planted some of them in the Cemetery where the four Americans are buried."[243] Decoration Day, which Mr. Harris thus inaugurated in Japan, is now regularly observed with formal ceremonies by the American residents and Officers, Bluejackets and Marines from the men-of-war in port.[244]

While Mr. Harris was thus successfully working in Japan the ratifications of the treaty he had negotiated with Siam were being exchanged at Bangkok.[245] But Mr. Harris did not hear of these Siamese matters until about four months later when the Portsmouth visited him on September 7, 1857.[246]

I "had a national salute of twenty-one guns fired in honor of the day by the Japanese, I paying the expense, which was less than two dollars," wrote Harris on July 4, 1857.[247]

The Portsmouth arrived at Shimoda on September 7, 1857.[248] Her Marines were commanded by Second Lieutenant W. W. Kirkland.[249] Captain Andrew Hull Foote, commanding the Portsmouth, called on Harris at 2:00 p.m. the 8th.[250]

Harris visited the Portsmouth the following day and enjoyed a pleasant dinner in the cabin. On September 10, 1857 Harris, Captain Foote and his officers called on the Governor at Shimoda.[251] The Portsmouth sailed on September 12, 1857.[252]

Harris started on his journey to Yedo on November 23, 1857.[253] He entered Yedo on November 30, 1857.[254] Mr. Harris

had his first audience with the Tai-Kun on December 7, 1857.[255] Negotiations were opened January 28, 1858.[256]

Early in 1858 the Japanese frustrated a plot of the Ro-nin to assassinate the American Ambassador.[257]

On July 23, 1858 the U.S.S. Mississippi arrived at Shimoda with the news of peace in China, the suppression of the Sepoy Mutiny in India, the capture of the Pei-ho forts by the British and French forces, and the coming of the Allied fleets to Japan.[258]

Commodore Josiah Tattnall appeared at Shimoda in the Powhatan on July 25, 1858. Mr. Harris reached Kanagawa on July 27, 1858 and delivered his letter of the 24th.[259] The Yedo Government acted promptly and with independence. Ii Kamon no Kami, the regent and premier, despatched the two Commissioners, Shimano no Kami and Higo no Kami, to Kanagawa by a steamer, which anchored near the Powhatan at midnight July 28, 1858. Despite the rule against salutes after sundown, Commodore Tattnall received the two envoys on his ship with a salute of 17 guns.[260] The treaty was signed the next day.[261] The treaty was thus dated July 29, 1858 instead of September 4, 1858.[262] It secured, in general, the privilege of permanent residence to United States Citizens, the opening of Nagasaki, the right of Consular jurisdiction and commercial intercourse and that Yokohama should be open on July 4, 1859.[262] Captain Algernon S. Taylor commanded the Marines of the Powhatan at this time.[263]

On Sunday, August 1, 1858 "divine service was, under authority of the Treaty, publicly performed by the chaplain" of the Powhatan, "at the residence of our Consul and under the American Flag, a large number of the Officers and men of the Powhatan and Mississippi attending," reported Commodore Tattnall. "The Consul resides in a Buddhist Temple. Thus the first public renewal of Christian worship since the expulsion of the Jesuits two hundred and forty years since has been under our flag a heathen temple".[264]

Mr. Reed, the American Minister to China, decided to spend a few months in Japan. The Minnesota carried him there, and by September 20, 1858 that vessel was anchored at Nagasaki. The Minnesota left Nagasaki for Shanghai on October 7. S. Wells Williams, who was on board, wrote that "we had hardly reached the outer islands when we saw the Mississippi coming in." "As she drew near, we were not a little surprised to observe the Marines on the hurricane deck, the big bow-gun pointed out of the port bulwarks, which were all down, and the entire crew at general quarters, it being yet hardly eight o'clock." Captain Nicholson, of the Mississippi visited the Minnesota and explained that "he was direct from Hakodate, where the latest news from the United States was by way of California, where the discussion respecting the conduct of British vessel firing into American ships was so strong that the captain was convinced that ere this, war must have been declared by Great Britain. In any event, he was determined

not to be caught napping, as perhaps we might be an English cruiser simulating an American ship and waiting for any prey which might turn up. Nor when Captain Du Pont had hoisted the Minnesota's number was he altogether convinced, but sheered round, so as to expose his whole broadside to the possible enemy."[265] The Marines of the Minnesota were commanded by Brevet Major George H. Terrett with Second Lieutenant Edward Jones as junior officer.[265] First Lieutenant Jacob Read commanded the Marines of the Mississippi.[263]

Commodore Tattnall at Nagasaki on the Powhatan, on October 27, 1858, wrote Mr. Harris that after leaving him he "encountered a severe gale which put out of question" his "reaching Shanghai in time for the August mail," and he therefore touched at Nagasaki "to communicate with the Minnesota. She had left Shanghai with a heavy sick-list, and had lost nine men by cholera. I started my son with the treaty from Shanghai on the 4th of September, and have heard nothing from him since, as I left Shanghai for" Nagasaki "on the 6th September, the cholera having gotten on board and carried off three of my men," wrote Tattnall. "Our countrymen were quite gratified in your having anticipated John Bull in the treaty, and the latter is sadly mortified, as shown in a publication in a Shanghai paper, made, it is said, by one of Lord Elgin's attaches. I hope that my son may reach home in time to get a notice of your treaty in the President's Message. In due course of mail - that is, allowing sixty days from Hong Kong,

which he left on the 12th of September - he should arrive in Washington by the 12th of November, and Congress will meet on the 6th of December. I urged him to all speed possible.* * * We have got along well here (Nagasaki) with the Japanese authorities and people, and I think that the uniform kindness with which I have treated them is well calculated to produce a good effect."[267]

With mighty squadrons, the British, French and Russians came later and made treaties, and these were followed by twenty nations; but the treaty negotiated by Townsend Harris is the basis of them all.[268] Mexico was the first country (November 30, 1888)[268] to treat with Japan on equal terms.

Mr. Harris on January 7, 1859 was made Minister Resident of the United States to Japan.[269] The United States steamer Mississippi, Captain W.C. Nicholson arrived at Shimoda on February 27, 1859. She proceeded on March 2, 1859 to Kanagawa carrying Townsend Harris.[270] First Lieutenant Jacob Read commanded the Marines of the Mississippi.[271] On June 30, 1859 the American Consulate was removed from Shimoda to Kanagawa where the American flag was hoisted July 1, 1859. On July 7, 1859, "accompanied by a party of twenty-three fellow Americans from the U.S.S. Mississippi, Mr. Harris established the American Legation at the Shin Shiu Buddhist Temple, Zempukuji (Shrine of Virtue and Happiness) which had been founded A.D. 1232 by the famous teacher and missionary Icho."[272]

The J. Fenimore Cooper (Lieutenant John M. Brooks) on

survey duty arrived at Kanagawa Bay on August 13, 1859. On the 23rd of that month "a severe cyclone" caused the Cooper to drag her anchors and strike repeatedly, so that to avoid her loss and save the lives of her crew she was obliged to be run ashore. Every assistance was offered by Commodore Popoff, of the Russian Squadron, to repair and refit her; but her timbers were too decayed and all hopes of repairing her were abandoned. "Lieutenant Brooks, with part of her crew, at the request of the Japanese Government, returned to San Francisco in the Japanese war steamer Kandinamarrah, to aid the Captain of that vessel in navigating her across the Pacific."[273]

Mr. Harris remained in Yedo as American Minister "amid murders, assassinations and incendiarisms, when all his colleagues had struck their flags and retired to Yokahama," and kept the American flag flying. Mr. Heusken (a native of Holland and Harris' clerk and interpreter) was murdered in January of 1860 and Premier Ii-Kamon, the Regent of the Shogun, slaughtered on March 23, 1860.[274] The more conservative of the native princes were determined on a return to the old, exclusive policy of the Empire.[274]

Commodore Tattnall transferred the East India Squadron to Commodore Cornelius K. Stribling at Hong Kong in November, 1859 and a short time later sailed for Yeddo (Tokyo).[275]

Captain Cornelius K. Stribling, arrived at Shanghai aboard the Hartford, on May 25, 1860 and found the Saginaw there. He reported to Secretary of the Navy Isaac Toucey on

May 28, 1860 that he could not "under existing conditions send a vessel to Japan to look after our commercial interests there."[276] On October 3, 1860 Stribling informed the Secretary that he would leave Shanghai as soon as the Saginaw returned, he would sail for Japan and that he expected to "leave Yeddo early in November for Hong Kong."[277] The Marines of the Hartford were commanded by Captain Addison Garland with Second Lieutenant Lucian L. Dawson as junior officer.[278]

The Hartford departed from Shanghai on October 5, 1860 and "arrived at Naugasaki (sic) on the 9th." Captain Stribling reported to the Secretary: "We remained at the latter place until the 17th when we left for Kanagawa. On our passage from Naugasaki to Kanagawa we went through the Inner Sea of Japan. This Sea has not been frequented by foreign ships until the present year. * * * Osaca is the commercial emporium of Japan where all the capitalists reside. * * * On our passage through the Inner Sea we anchored four times; at two of these places we were offered wood and water, and when parties of officers landed they were permitted to walk around the towns, and were treated with great civility." The Hartford was anchored off Osaca from three o'clock on the afternoon of October 22nd to eight o'clock the nexy morning. Captain Stribling sent a message ashore that he wished to go ashore and pay his "respects to the Governor." Courteous evasion with several messages indicated to Captain Stribling that a call was not desired, so he sailed on, without making any further efforts to make the

call. The Hartford arrived at Kanagawa on October 25, 1860 "and remained there and at Yeddo until" November 6, 1860.[279]

The Hartford anchored at Hong Kong on November 15, 1860.[279] Captain Stribling here heard of the arrival of the Niagara at Hong Kong and her departure. "At all the places visited in Japan we were received kindly and civilly except Osaca," reported Captain Stribling to the Secretary of the Navy. "And our merchants appeared to be carrying on their business successfully without impediments of any importance from the Japanese authorities."[279]

The Saginaw arrived at Kanagawa, Japan, on November 4, 1860.[280] Townsend Harris, on November 7, 1860, at the "Legation of the United States, Yedo," acknowledged receipt of Captain Stribling's letter of September 4, 1860 in which Mr. Harris had been informed that the Saginaw would convey Mr. Harris "to the ports in Japan," which he "desired to visit." Mr. Harris explained that the season was too far advanced for the visits and hoped that he could have the use of the vessel at the proper season.[281] "The Saginaw arrived" at Hong Kong on November 27, 1860 from "Kanagawa, Japan via Nagasaki (sic), having left the former place on the 15th" reported Captain Stribling. "By the Saginaw I learn that the Niagara arrived at Yeddo" on November 8, 1860 "and would probably leave" for Hong Kong "on the 20th or 21st and may be expected here on the 1st or 2d of December."[280]

The events leading up to the exchange of ratifications[282]

of the treay made by Townsend Harris[283] with the Government of Japan were many and varied. The fourteenth article of this treaty provided that the ratifications would be exchanged at Washington City on or before July 4, 1859.[284]

On September 4, 1858 Mr. Harris wrote to Commodore Josiah Tattnall: "The Japanese Government has appointed a special ambassador to proceed direct to the United States, as the bearer of their ratification. This is the first diplomatic agent ever sent out from Japan, and it is intended by this government as a special mark of respect for that of the United States. They desire that the ambassador should proceed to the United States via Panama, to avoid all parts of Europe; not having suitable vessels to transport their ministers across the Pacific Ocean, they have applied to me for a suitable conveyance. * * * Lord Elgin requested the Japanese to send an ambassador direct to England, and offered to furnish them with any conveyances they might require. The Japanese evaded his application, by saying that it was not, as yet determined, to send ambassadors to any nation. We were the first nation to make a treaty of amity with the Japanese. This we have followed up by making the first commercial treat with them, and to have the eclat to receive the first Embassy from this singular people cannot but redound to our national honor. * * * The time named on which the ambassador would be ready to commence his voyage is December 7", 1858. "The Japanese applied to me, unofficially, to have a naval officer

attend the Ambassador from Panama to Washington" Harris advised the Department of this request, "should it, however, be overlooked" he wrote to Tattnall, "I would respectfully suggest to you the issuing of conditional orders to some one of the officers attached to the frigate that proceeds to Panama!" 285

Mr. Harris, on September 6, 1858, reported to Secretary of State Lewis Cass that the Japanese Government has applied to him "for a steamer to convey their ambassador to the United States," and explained that as there had not been time to so inform the Department of State and receive a reply back in time, he had requested Commodore Tattnall "to furnish the desired conveyance to the Japanese." Prince Ota of Bingo, Prince Manabay of Simoosa, and Prince Kuse of Yamato on August 27, 1858 wrote to Mr. Harris: "As the exchange of ratifications at Washington of the treaty that has lately been signed is the first instance of a mission ever sent abroad by our nation, it has been proposed to convey that mission, and have it returned, in a United States man-of-war. For Your Excellency's friendly feelings, we are much obliged, and we request Your Excellency to propose to the United States Government that a man-of-war may arrive in this Empire for this purpose, after the eleventh Japanese month of this year (after the 7th December, 1858). Stated with respect, the 19th day of the 7th month of the 5th year of Ansei Ilma (August 27, 1858)!

"I have now to state that the Japanese Government has informed me that it will not be able to send the Embassy at the

time stated," wrote Mr. Harris to Commodore Tattnall on February 2, 1859. * * * I deem it important for the interests of the United States that I should visit Nagasaki, Nee-o-gata, and Hakodadi; and if you can consistently with the public service permit the next ship that arrives here to convey me to those ports, I shall be greatly abliged."[286]

"The United States steamer Mississippi, Captain William C Nicholson, arrived" at Shimoda, on February 27, 1859, "having been ordered here by Flag-Officer Josiah Tattnall, for the purpose of conveying the Japanese Embassy to the American continent." Mr. Harris had informed the Department of State on January 29th "that the Japanese Government desired to postpone the departure of their Embassy." As "no definite arrangements had been concluded" Mr. Harris "went to Kanagawa in the Mississippi," on March 2 and on his arrival there "wrote to the Japanese Minister for Foreign Affairs, informing him of the arrival of the Mississippi, and tendering her to the Government for the purpose before stated." On the evening of March 3, 1859 "four Commissioners arrived at Kanagawa, for the purpose of making a Convention which should postpone the time fixed for the exchange of the ratifications of the Treaty of Yedo." It was signed March 19, 1859. "The second article provides that no Embassy shall be sent to any country until after the arrival of the Japanese Ambassadors at Washington." The Embassy would be ready to start by October 25, 1859.[287]

"Mr. Harris, consul general of the United States to

Japan, having received am official application from the Japanese government for a conveyance of their ambassadors to the United States, the steam frigate Mississippi was sent to Simoda, and a passage in her to Panama was tendered for the embassy, and official orders were given to Flag-officer McCluney, of the Home Squadron, to receive them as they crossed the Isthmus at Panama, and convey them in a public vessel to the port of New York. The Mississippi reached Japan in February, having made all suitable arrangements for the accomodation of the Commissioners, but they had determined to postpone their departure until February, 1860. As the Mississippi could not be detained, she was ordered to the United States, and discretionary instructions given to Flag officer Tattnall, on being relieved by his successor, to return home with the Powhatan by way of Japan, and, if the Commissioners were ready to embark, to give them a passage to Panama."[288]

Secretary of State Lewis Cass wrote Mr. Harris on April 30, 1859, that "the arrival of the Japanese Commissioners will be hailed with much pleasure by the Government and People of the United States," and that "orders have already left the Navy Department, directing the ambassadors to be met at Aspinwall by the United States steam frigate Roanoke, and conveyed from thence to New York."[289]

On November 15, 1859 Mr. Harris reported to Secretary Cass: The Japanese Embassy "will embark on board the Powhatan" at Yedo "between the 1st and 22d days of February," 1860.

"I renew the recommendation that the Embassy should be conveyed from Aspinwall directly to the Potomac, without touching at any other port in the United States. * * * The Palace of the Tycoon was totally destroyed by fire on" November 12, 1859. "The buildings were erected nearly three centuries ago, and contained the Hall in which the Dutch received their humiliations for more than two hundred years. It may not be uninteresting to know that the first and last person ever received in that Palace with proper respect and without submitting to degrading observances, was the diplomatic representative of the United States. The Japanese have eagerly seized on this accident as an excuse for the almost total suspension of all business at the opened ports, and plead it as a reason for not replying to my letter of remonstrance on the subject of my last audience. Our affairs are in an unsatisfactory state. The Japanese evade the faithful observance of the most important of the treaty stipulations, or meet them with a passive resistance."[290]

Commodore Tattnall, being "too unwell to write or call" on Mr. Harris, early in November, directed his Flag Lieutenant to call. He reported to the Commodore that "the Panama route has been selected by the Japanese; that the time of departure may be any time", after "the Japanese New Year," that suited Commodore Tattnall; and "that the number of officials (gentlemen, in our sense)" would be twenty "and their servants fifty-one, making in all seventy-one." Commodore

Tattnall wrote Mr. Harris on November 11, 1859, from his "Flagship Powhatan, off Kanagawa, Japan," that he would "inform the Secretary of the Navy that I shall leave Japan on the 1st day of February next, and make such suggestions to him as may enable him to have a ship at Aspinwall prepared as may be for them. I regret the number of Japanese servants, from the impossibility of providing them accomadations as comfortable as I could wish. The officials we can get along with with discomfort only to ourselves."[291]

On November 26, 1859 Commodore Tattnall suggested to Secretary of the Navy Isaac Toucey that inasmuch as he could hardly spare a naval officer, "that Captain Taylor of the Marines be ordered," to accompany the Japanese Commissioners to Washington.[292]

"The principal object of the mission of the Embassy was to get an English copy of the Treay between Japan and the United States, signed by the President. The original was burned in the great fire at Jeddo (Tokyo) in 1858. The copy in Japanese was saved. This they brought with them, and a copy of it not signed, and a letter from the Tycoon to the President. The box containing these documents was looked upon by them as almost sacred. It was called the "Treaty Box," and was never allowed to be out of their sight. It was a box three feet long, twenty-six inches in depth, and eighteen inches wide, covered with red morocco leather, and neatly sewed around the edges. There were three japanned boxes

placed together, and then covered. Around the box was a light framework, and when carried was borne on a pole which rested on the shoulders of two stalwart policemen, closely followed by a Japanese with two swords in his girdle.[293]

The Powhatan arrived at Kanagawa, Japan on December 11, 1859.[294]

"We anchored in the harbor of Yokohama January eleventh, when Commodore Tattnall immediately sent word to Jeddo (Tokyo) to Mr. Harris, Our Minister, of his arrival and readiness to receive the Japanese Ambassadors" wrote Chaplain Henry Wood of the Powhatan. Mr. Harris consulted with the Commodore on the 14th. On that day the Japanese Ambassadors inspected the ship and their accomodations. They went aboard the Powhatan on January 16, 1860, "when they were received with a salute, and shown all possible courtesy and attention by the Commodor and Captain Pearson and all the other officers. They came without ostentation or parade, and, though dignified, showed no proud carriage, but rather seemed a little diffident and timid, as they stepped upon the quarter-deck, the Commodore and Captain and all the officers in full uniform waiting to receive them, and the company of Marines, under Captain Taylor, presenting their bright arms, while the band soon di coursed our patriotic national airs."[295]

Lieutenant Johnston of the Powhatan wrote that the "officers paraded on the starboard side of the quarter deck in uniform," and "the Marine Guard on the opposite side."[296]

"Friday morning, February 1st, leaving Yokohama, two boats brought us to the roadstead of Jeddo, where we anchored about five miles from the wharf, the shallowness of the water making this necessary for all large vessels. The next day Commodore Tattnall made a call upon Mr. Harris, who at once communicated with the Japanese Prime Minister, who assured him that the Ambassadors would be ready to leave on the 10th instant, it having been found impossible to complete all the necessary arrangements by the 1st of February, as had previously been arranged. Everything, therefore, was decided; the Japanese Government was found true to its engagements, as Mr. Harris always said it would be, whenever it had made them.[297]

This Embassy was the most formal Embassy sent abroad by the Shogunate.[298] It was composed of Shimmi, Prince of Boozen and Mooragaki, Prince of Awadsi, the two envoys; Ogoori Matatitsee, Chief Censor; one Vice-Governor of the Treasury; one Vice Governor for Foreign Affairs; one Secretary of the First Rank (Serabay Akoo); two Inspectors of the First Rank; two Secretaries of the Second Rank two Treasury Officers; two Inspectors of the Second Rank; two Interpreters; two Doctors; and fifty-three servants; seventy-one in all.[299]

"It was the first time in the history of that Empire that Embassadors had ever been sent to a foreign government. The Japanese were unskilled in navigation, and were compelled to trust to a foreign vessel the transportation of their diplomatic representatives. Having materially assisted in con-

summating the treaty, Flag-officer Tattnall - looking to the early establishment of commercial and friendly relations between the two governments, - was most solicitious, during the voyage, to extend to the Embassadors every courtesy, and impress them with favorable views of the United States. His hospitalities were most marked, decorous, and profuse, and were productive of the happiest influences."[300]

Secretary of the Navy Isaac Toucey reported that "the steam frigate Powhatan, Captain George F. Pearson, bearing Flag Officer Tattnall on his return home, received the Embassy on board, consisting of seventy-two persons and set sail from Yeddo on the 13th of February, 1860."[301]

"About two o'clock, all the arrangements having been completed, the Ambassadors approached the Powhatan in their own junk when orders were given to all the officers to appear on the quarter decks, to receive them with all the honors. The great guns spoke a hearty welcome, which was wafted back over the immense city, and perhaps heard even in the Imperial Palace, when at the same time, a strange sight appeared at the top of the foremast - the Japanese flag, a great sun in the heavens, floating on the breeze from an American man-of-war, in company with the Stars and Stripes and the Commodore' broad blue pennant!"[302]

The Powhatan stopped at Honolulu on March 5, 1860. Here "Flag Officer Tattnall and his guests were the recipients of the most distinguished marks of consideration and kindness

from the officials and prominent citizens of the place, and also from the King himself" (King Kamehameha IV).[303]

"Under the conduct of Captain Algernon S. Taylor, of the Marine Corps, they left the ship with all their numerous retinue and repaired to the French Hotel, the best in town. They had spacious rooms, and spent in them their first night in a foreign land. The arrival of the Embassy being earlier than the King expected, the arrangements for their accomodation had not been completed. It was intended that the Dudoit House should be their home during their visit, but they said they preferred the Powhatan for their home; they would, however, accept the use of the house for purposes of reception." Accompanied by Commodore Tattnall, the principal officers of the Powhatan, and the United States Commissioner the Japanese "made a call of etiquette upon the King's Ministers at the residence of Prince Kamehameha, brother of the King, adjoining the Palace Grounds." On a later date "the whole party was received by the King of the Islands. The Throne Room was fitted up with all the splendor attainable. The Japanese did not understand the crinoline of the Queen and the ladies of her court, and supposed that their shape indicated their full form, and it was some time before they could make out the mystery of hoops and skirts. One of them accidentally probed the mystery and discovered the balloon nature of the arrangement as it caved in in the course of the pressure to which it was occasionally exposed in moving about. On the

evening of the 13th Dr. Guillow, of the United States Hospital in Honolulu, gave a ball to Commodore Tattnall and his officers, and the King, Queen, Prince Kamehameha, and some of the attachés of the Embassy attended. On Tuesday, of the second week, a picnic was gotten up, in the native style, of chickens, pigs, and fish cooked in the ground. The next night Judge Borden gave a ball. On Thursday night the Honolulu Rifles, of which the King is Colonel, gave a ball at their Armory. He worked with his coat off in getting things ready for the entertainment. The English residents at Honolulu proposed a demonstration in honor of Commodore Tattnall on account of his course at the mouth of the Peiho, but the Commodore was obliged to decline. While lying at Honolulu the Powhatan fired sixteen salutes, making two hundred and eighty-six guns. The responses were made from the rim of an old crater, 780 feet high, called the Devil's Punch Bowl."[304]

The Mission arrived at San Francisco aboard the Powhatan on March 29, 1860 and proceeded almost immediately to Mare Island with the Ambassadors on board.[305] Commodore Tattnall reported their arrival to Secretary of the Navy Toucey "by the Overland Mail." The Japanese arrived in "good health and spirits, although they suffered greatly from sea-sickness and other unavoidable inconveniences."[306]

The U.S.S. Active and U.S.S. Shubrick transported the distinguished Japanese visitors, on March 31, 1860, from Mare Island to San Francisco. The Independence and Active fired

salutes. On the first discharge of a salute by the Powhatan Commodore Cunningham was injured and the salute was not completed.[307]

Commodore Tattnall sent Captain Algernon S. Taylor from Mare Island "to Panama by the mail steamer" of April 5th which would reach Panama a "week sooner than the Powhatan that" he might "communicate with the officer commanding the ship at Aspinwall intended to receive the Commissioners, and aid him, by his knowledge of the peculiar habits and customs of the Japanese in preparing for their reception."[308]

The Japanese Embassy remained a week in California (when the Japanese Ambassadors visited San Francisco "a great military demonstration was taking place at San Francisco when the messenger of the 'Poney (sic) Express' left."[309]) and sailed on board the Powhatan for Panama on April 11, 1860.[310] Panama was reached on April 24, 1860.[310½] From there the party, escorted by Captain Taylor, of the Marines, proceeded across the Isthmus to the Atlantic waters where they boarded the U.S. steam frigate Roanoke,[311] on the 25th. Captain Josiah Watson commanded the Marines of this vessel with Second Lieutenant Philip H. W. Fontane as junior officer.[312] Commodore Tattnall proceeded from San Francisco to Washington via Panama "for the purpose of laying before the Government all the information in his power relative to these singular and interesting visitors," from Japan. From Aspinwall in Panama to New York he traveled on the S. S. Northern Light.[313]

Arriving in the Chesapeake the Embassy transferred on May 13, 1860 from the Roanoke to the chartered steamer Philadelphia.

On May 14, 1860, the Chartered steamer Philadelphia anchored "about 80 paces from her big sister" the Roanoke. "The committee of reception were soon on board," and "the ceremony of presentation took place in the cabin. The members of the Embassy being arranged according to rank, Captain Taylor advanced, and introduced the committee of reception. Captain Dupont made a brief address, saying: 'Embassadors! I welcome you in the name of the President, of the United States, who has anxiously expected your arrival, and will be pleased to learn that you are well. I bid you welcome.' Captain Dupont then presented Mr. Ledyard" who represented the Secretary of State. They then went aboard the Philadelphia. Went to Old Point Comfort and the Japanese inspected the fort. The Army rendered honors. Arrived at the Navy Yard Wharf on May 14, 1860. Received by officials.[313½]

A correspondent of the Baltimore American, who went down in the Philadelphia to meet the frigate Roanoke in Hampton Roads, thus describes what took place there after the arrival of the Roanoke:

"The Philadelphia fired up, and at ten o'clock was approaching the Roanoke. The latter presented a beautiful spectacle: her clear white canvas had been gracefully furled, whilst the Japanese flag was thrown to the breeze from the foremast, and that of the United States floating from the

peak. The Philadelphia, running around the stern of the ship, the engine was stopped, when the Marine Band of Washington, numbering thirty performers, was posted forward on the upper deck, and discoursed the most delightful melodies, which we have heard for a long time, and must have pleased the Japanese, who now appeared on deck, and by their smiling countenances, attested a sense of gratification. The band of the Roanoke responded, when a cutter, manned by twelve oarsmen, was sent off and conveyed to the Roanoke the members of the Commission and their Secretary; a second boat carried the attachés and prominent citizens, whilst a third, occupied by representatives of the press, who hurriedly whiffed along, and the whole party were soon upon the decks gazing with earnestness upon the scene."[314]

Francis Scala was Leader of the Marine Band at this time.[315]

The Philadelphia bearing the Embassy steamed up the Bay and the Potomac to Washington where they arrived on the 14th.[316]

Here they were most liberally accomodated at Willard's Hotel, every precaution being taken to make their first visit to America comfortable and pleasant.[317]

Captain Samuel F. Du Pont of the Navy detailed to take charge of the Japanese during their sojourn in the United States.[318]

On May 16, 1860 Secretary of the Navy Isaac Toucey ordered Colonel Commandant John Harris to "be pleased to direct all the available Marines at Headquarters, under proper officers and accompanied by the Marine Band, to report to Captain

Du Pont at Willard's Hotel tomorrow (Thursday) at half past ten o'clock a. m., to act as a Guard to the Japanese Embassy on their way to and from the President's."[319]

The interest excited by the arrival and movements of the Japanese Embassy arose to a climax on May 17, 1860 when President James Buchanan received it.[320] "The officers of the Navy [and Marine Corps] formed a line on one side of the room" and "opposite, another line was formed of Army officers."[320½]

"The great centre of attraction was on Fourteenth Street, that is to say at the eastern doorway of Willards, by which the Embassy was to pass out to take their places in the procession The United States Marines, Ordnance Guards, and Marine Band were drawn up in the middle of Fourteenth Street in waiting to form an escort to the Embassy."[321]

"True to the time they had appointed the Japanese officials commenced leaving their hotel at half-past eleven o'clock and as soon as they were seated in the carriages drawn up to convey them, the procession moved forward down Fourteenth Street, and along Pennsylvania Avenue, by Fifteenth Street, to the President's House. The Marine Band preceded, followed by the Ordnance men, the United States Marines forming a line on each side of the carriages, which each bore an officer of the Embassy in full ceremonial custom. Between every two carriage from two to four Japanese gaurds, armed with swords, not drawn marched on foot, one of them carrying aloft a small ensign in Japanese fashion on a pole of about twelve feet high. Of the

ensigns there were eight, two or three of them formed in the general shape of a Maltese cross, one similar to the flower known as princes-feather, and others of a design which we find it difficult to describe."[322]

"On arriving at the doorway of the Executive Mansion the Japanese Guards took the advance and distributed themselves in a double line, between which the Ambassadors and superior officers passed into the interior of the building. Here they remained about ten minutes, until the central folding doors of the great East Room were thrown open when the Oriental strangers found themselves in the presence of several hundreds of American ladies and gentlemen, the latter comprising the President and his Cabinet officers, Senators, Members of the House of Representatives, and Officers of the Army and Navy in full dress and unusual numbers."[323]

Upon the conclusion of the ceremony the Embassy was escorted back to the Hotel.[324]

On May 19, 1860 Secretary Toucey directed that the Marine Band would "perform at the President's on Saturday Evening, the 19th, instant (for the evening only) instead of the Capitol Grounds" as "the Japanese will be present."[325]

Ratifications of the treaty were exchanged on May 22, 1860 at the Department of State. In the evening "the Chief Ambassadors held a levee in one of the larger rooms of their suite at Willard's Hotel," the "ceremony of shaking hands, did not, however, prevail."[326]

The Japanese delivered their presents from the Tycoon "at the Executive Mansion," on May 23, 1860. "Later in the day members of the Embassy paid their first visit to the Capitol," "accompanied by the Naval Mission."[327]

On May 24, 1860 "the members of the Japanese Embassy paid a formal visit to the Navy Yard where they were received with all the honors by Commodore Buchanan and Captain Dahlgren and other officers connected with the Yard and the service and were saluted with a salvo of seventeen guns."[328] "The Japanese Embassy on Tuesday and Wednesday [May 29 and 30, 1860] received visits from members of the military and naval service of the United States, and their families."[328½]

"The four Japanese Ambassadors, with eight of the officers the next highest in rank, accompanied by Captains Dupont, Lee and Mr. Portman, the interpreter, visited the Executive Mansion" on June 5, 1860 "for the purpose of holding their final interview with the President."[329]

After visiting Baltimore[329½] and Philadelphia[329½] the Embassy on June 30, 1860 sailed from New York on board the steam frigate Niagara for Japan.[330]

Her Marine officers were First Lieutenant Israel Green and Second Lieutenant George Butler.[331] They sailed around the Cape of Good Hope and arrived at Yedo (Tokyo) on November 8, 1860 the Embassy landing the next day.[332]

JAPAN, 1846-1860

Material and Sources
of
Chapter XVIII, Volume II
(Part Two)

History of the United States Marine Corps

By

Major Edwin North McClellan, U.S. Marines
Officer-in-Charge
Historical Section

(Notes and Index)

(Only two hundred copies made)

First Edition
September 21, 1932

FORENOTE

This compilation is not the final manuscript of this Chapter but represents only material and sources upon which it will be based. Since the information expressed in this History required original research, which has not been completed, it was decided to publish it first in mimeographed form. Considerable additional information will have been collected by the time it is desirable to write the final manuscript for printing. It is purposely made voluminous in order to make public, details of early Marine Corps History that obviously will not be included in a printed work because of lack of space. The plan provides for seven large volumes divided into appropriate chapters.

If details concerning the participation of the Navy and Army in any operation or incident described herein do not appear, such omission occurs only because it is impracticable in a history of this character to set forth more than the work of the Marines themselves. To do more than this would extend the history beyond a practical scope and size. In many of the operations described, the Navy or the Army, or both, have been present in greater strength than the Marines, and full credit is here given for their splendid achievements.

Only two hundred copies of this chapter have been made. If for any reason those to whom it is sent do not desire to retain it please inform the Historical Section, U.S. Marine Corps, Washington, D.C. and arrangements will be made for its return.

As a matter of convenience this chapter is divided into two parts.

The following form of citation is suggested if it is desired to cite, either in published works, or manuscript, any information contained herein:-

(McClellan, Hist., U.S.M.C., 1st ed., II,
Ch. XVIII, p--)

NOTES

CHAPTER XVIII, VOLUME TWO

PART TWO

---

1. "We have it in contemplation to institute a separate mission to Japan; but if you find the prospect favorable, you may fill up one of the letters of credence with the appropriate title of Emperor, and present yourself there for the purpose of opening a trade. But, in that case, you must not go in a national vessel, which cannot submit to the indignity of being disarmed, as all foreign vessels are, in the ports of Japan, and with which degrading custom a Russian frig ate condescended to comply. The Peacock may convoy you in a coasting vessel chartered for the purpose, and not enter until you receive the assurance that nothing unbecoming the dignity of the country will be required. But you are not to go to any extraordinary expense for this purpose, unless you have a very reasonable prospect of ultimate success; and, at any rate, postpone your operations in that quarter until you have completed those contemplated by your first instructions." (Sec. State Edw. Livingston to Edmund Roberts, 28 Oct. 1832, Senate Ex. Doc. Vol. IX, 32d Cong., 1st Sess. p. 63); "Mr. Edmund Roberts, a sea captain of Portsmouth, N.H., was named by President Jackson, his agent" for the purpose of "examining in the Indian ocean the means of extending the commerce of the United States by commercial arrangements with the Powers whose dominions border on those seas." He was ordered, January 27, 1832, to embark on the United States Sloop-of-war, Peacock, in which he was rated as captain's clerk. On the 23rd of July, he was ordered "to be very careful in obtaining information respecting Japan, the means of opening a communication with it, and the value of its trade with the Dutch and Chinese." Arriving at Canton, he might receive further instructions. He had with him blanks. On the 28th of October, 1832, Edward Livingstone, the United States Secretary of State, instructed him that the United States had it in contemplation to institute a separate mission to Japan. If, however, a favorable opportunity presented, he might fill up a letter and present it to the "Emperor" for the purpose of opening trade. Roberts was successful in inaugurating diplomatic and commercial relations with Muscat and Siam, but, on account of his premature death, nothing came of his mission to Japan. He died June 12, 1836, at Macao, where his tomb duly inscribed, is in the Protestant cemetery (Griffis' Perry, 272-273). Orders

1. Continued.
dated Oct. 28, 1832 to Roberts by Edw. Livingston on p.63 of Senate Exec. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong. 1st Sess.; "The Executive, in the year 1832 resolved on an attempt to place our commercial relations, with some of the powers of Asia, on a sure and advantageous basis orders were issued to prepare the U.S.S. Peacock and the schooner Boxer for that special object." (Embassy to Eastern Courts by Roberts, 13); Commanders Letters, Oct. 1832, July-Dec.1833, I, Jan-June 1834, 108, Letter to Off. Ships of War, XX, 242, 244, XXI, 421, 507 all in Navy Arch.; Nav. Inst. Proc., Sept. 1910, 716-717; "In 1832 Edmund Roberts was sent by President Jackson to investigate commercial possibilities in the Indian Ocean. He was instructed to obtain information respecting Japan." (Reuter, Anglo-Amer. Rel. Span.& Amer. War, 23); "President Jackson sent a man to the East in 1831" (III Spears, Hist. Navy, 440); "President Jackson in 1831 appointed Edmund Roberts as agent 'to open trade in the Indian Ocean' " (II Maclay, Hist. Navy 120); "However, in the time of the Shogun Iyenari, the only steps taken were, first, the suggestion of John Quincy Adams as to the responsibility of the United States in the matter of re-opening Japan, and, secondly, the plan of President Andrew Jackson in 1832 to send Edmond Roberts as American envoy to the Oriental courts. The interesting extensions and consequences of this new policy we shall see during the reign of the succeeding Shogun." (Gowen, Outline Hist. of Japan, 282, citing Nitobe, The Japanese Nation, XI); Foster's "A Century of American Diplomacy," 333; Commodore Porter, as far back as 1815, addressed a letter to Mr. Monroe (Secretary of State) on the subject of Japan. It was then intended to send out Com. Porter with a frigate and two sloops of war, but the plan was defeated. (Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 242, citing DeBow's Review, Dec. 1852 but Charles Oscar Paullin in Nav. Inst. Proc., expresses doubt that such an expedition was contemplated); "Commodore Porter was one of those officers sent out for this purpose [protect whaling in War of 1812] and he could recommend no better means of security to American Whalers than that of bringing Japan into amicable relations with his country. To this end he addressed a letter to Sec. Monroe in 1815. This was the year that a squadron under Decatur was sent to the Mediterranean and a treaty was signed with Algiers. Why should not another squadron be sent westward to Japan? The proposal seemed to about to be put into effect, and the Commodore was to be sent as an envoy with a frigate and 2 sloops of war." (Nitobe, The Japanese Nation, 262); "Commodore (David) Porter, who had been despatched to the Pacific for the protection of American whalers from the depredations of British rivalry, addressed a letter in 1815 to Secretary Monroe, on the

1. Continued.
subject of opening Japan. In consequence of this, it was intended to send out the Commodore with a frigate and two sloops of war; but the plan was defeated." (Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 31-32); Nat. Intell., April 14, 1852; "It is no wonder that John Quincy Adams should urge that it was the duty of Christian nations to open Japan, and that it was the duty of Japan to respond to the demands of the world, as no nation had a right to withhold its quota to the general progress of mankind." (Nitobe, Japanese Nation, 262); "A few years later [than 1815] the interest in Japan was again renewed by John Quincy Adams, who urged that it was the duty of Christian nations to open Japan and of Japan to respond, on the ground that no nation had a right to withdraw its private contribution to the welfare of the whole human race." (Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 31-32).

2. The visit of Edmund Roberts to Cochin-China, Siam and Muscat in the Peacock is described by Mr. Roberts in his Embassy to Cochin-China, Siam and Muscat, 228-319. 2d Lt. H. W. Fowler commanded the Marines of the Peacock and visited Bangkok with Mr. Roberts. (id); "In 1833 an American envoy, Edmund Roberts, succeeded in negotiating a treaty of amity and commerce with Siam and the Sultan of Muscat." (Fuess, "Caleb Cushing," 403); "The United States concluded a Treaty with Siam in 1833" (W.A.R.Wood, History of Siam, 277); Our first treaties with an Asiatic power can hardly be claimed to be to the credit of the Navy, although the stamp of the sea was on their negotiator, Edmund Roberts, a sea captain of Portsmouth, N.H., and he was rated as "captain's clerk" on board the naval vessel that took him out, so that we may perhaps not go in great state, for we read (Moore, op.cit.) that "If we were to judge by the provision made for his comfort and remuneration, we should infer that little importance was attached to his mission. His pay was barely sufficient to defray the cost of an insurance on his life for the benefit of his numerous children; and for three months he was obliged to lie on the sea-washed gun-deck with the crew, all the available space in the cabin being occupied by a charge d'affaires to Buenos Ayres whose name is now forgotten." Roberts was only partially successful, but he did bring back treaties with Siam and Muscat. ("Naval Officer in Diplomacy" by Rear Admiral H. S. Knapp, in Nav. Inst. Proc., Sept. 1924, 1477); Captain Geisinger was instructed to afford every facility to "Mr. Roberts, the gentleman who acts in the capacity of clerk to the Commander of the Peacock to enable him to carry into effect and success his instructions from the State Department." (Nav. Inst. Proc., Sept. 1910, 716-717, quoting Sec. Navy

2. Continued.
and which gives details of the visit to Siam); See also Captains Let., Dec. 1835, Aug. 1836 in Navy Arch.; Foster, Amer. Dip. in Orient, 45-54; Ruschenbergh, Voy. Round World, 89-94, 319-320, 340-344; A and N Chron. 4 Jan. 1835, 14; For complete history of this incident see Chapter VIII, Vol. II of this History.

3. "As I am about to undertake another voyage to exchange the ratificiations of the treaties alluded to in the Embassy, to form others in places not yet visited, and to extend, if possible, our commerce on advantageous terms, still farther east than India or Cochin-China, I beg my readers will consider the present volume as a prelude to much further and varied information, to be derived under more favourable auspices - more intimate knowledge of eastern forms - and that caution which should ever be the child of experience." (Embassy to the Eastern Courts of Cochin-China, Siam, and Muscat, 1832-34, Edmund Roberts, 8); Mr. Roberts arrived at the mouth of the Menam River late in March, 1836 with the Peacock and Enterprize. The exchange of ratifications occurred at Bangkok in April, 1836; Capt. Let. 1835, I, Navy Arch.; Nav. Inst. Proc. Sept. 1910, 722-724; Rushenberger, Voyage Round the World, 319-320; See Chapter V, Vol. II, this History.

4. Navy Arch.; Nav. Inst. Proc., Sept. 1910, 724; The Peacock (Stribling) arrived at Hampton Roads Oct. 26, 1837 "bearing the broad pendant of Commodore Edmund P. Kennedy," after having "circumnavigated the globe." (The Globe, 30 Oct. 1837); An. Rep. Sec. Navy Mahlon Dickerson, 1837; Sec. Navy Mahlon Dickerson in his Annual Report, 1837, to President Martin VanBuren stated that: "The sloop-of-war Peacock, Commodore Kennedy, which, with the schooner Enterprize, sailed from New York in April, 1835, on a cruise in the East Indies, and along the coast of Asia, with a view to the protection and extension of our commerce in that quarter, returned to the United States," on October 26, 1837, "having successfully accomplished the objects for which the cruise was undertaken. The Enterprize was detained by Commodore Ballard on the Pacific Station, where her services were required." See Chapter V, Vol. II, this History.

5. Sec. Navy J. K. Paulding to Wilkes 11 Aug. 1838, Letters to Officers, Ships of War, XXV, 407, Navy Arch; Wilkes, U.S. Exploring Expedition, p. xxvii; Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXVII, 408; see Chap. X , Vol. II for Wilkes Exploring Expedition.

6. Fuess, "Caleb Cushing," I, 409-412; Navy Arch.; See Chapter IX, Vol. II, this History.

7. Fuess, "Caleb Cushing," I, 430; Chapter IX, Vol. II, this History.

8. Fuess, "Caleb Cushing," I, 430; Chapter IX, Vol. II, this History.

9. Fuess, "Caleb Cushing," I, 430; Chapter IX, Vol. II, this History.

10. Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 243; On Aug. 5, 1845 A. H. Everett wrote Biddle that his "health does not permit us to continue the voyage, to China" and on the same date Biddle wrote him his regret that he had to "abandon your mission and leave the ship here," and that he would direct Parker to convey him home on the Brandywine. (East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); Later Mr. Everett informed Commodore Biddle "he had not fully decided whether to continue or relinquish the voyage." The Perry and St. Louis were allowed to sail homeward and Brandywine held for Everett. (Biddle to Sec. Navy G. Bancroft, 9 Aug.1845, East India Squad.Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); "Being compelled be ill-health to return home without completing the voyage to China I hereby request and authorize you to act as Commissioner of the Government of the United States in that country"etc. (Everett to Biddle, on U.S.S. Columbus at Rio Janeiro, 8 Aug. 1845, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); Yet on Aug. 9, 1845 at 9:00 a.m., Biddle wrote Parker that "Mr, Everett has this moment informed me that he has decided to continue the journey to China." (East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); "Mr. Everett, on account of ill-health, has abandoned his mission to China. He has transferred to me his instructions and his special power to exchange" ratifications of treaty between U.S. and China. Everett left the Columbus on Aug. 15. (East India); For the resolution in Congress of Representative Zadoc Pratt, that "immediate measures be taken for effecting commercial arrangements with the Empire of Japan and Corea" in February, 1845. see House Ex. Doc. No. 138, 2d Sess., 28th Cong., III; Congress Globe, XIX, 294; Griffis! Corea, Hermit Nation, 390; Nitobe, Japanese Nation, 268; Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 292; Maclay, Hist. Navy, II, 120.

11. "Received on board the Columbus as passengers, A. H. Everett, Commissioner to China, & family, & land them at Macao or as near to Canton as the Columbus can conveniently approach" etc. "In an especial manner you will take the utmost care to ascertain if the ports of Japan are accessible. Should the Commissioner incline to make

11. Continued.
the effort of gaining access there, you will hold your squadron at his disposition for that purpose; and should he decline to do so, you may yourself, if you see fit, persevere in the design, yet not in such a manner as to excite a hostile feeling or a distrust of the Government of the United States."

"The policy of the United States is avowedly pacific" etc.

"You will return by way of the Sandwich Islands, the west coast of America and Cape Horn." (Sec. Navy George Bancroft to Commodore James Biddle, 22 May 1845, Confidential Letters Navy Arch.; an extract of these orders are also published in Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, p. 64, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.); Conf. Letters, Navy Arch. I, 126; Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXI, 554 et seq; id, June 1911, 243; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 31-32; Reuter, Amer. Rel. Span-Amer. War, 23; John S. Foster, "A Century of American Diplomacy", 333-334); "Commodore Biddle was sent with the big ship-of-the-line Columbus and the Vincennes". (III Spears, Hist. Navy, 440); "Commodore Biddle, sent soon after to the China Seas, with a considerable American Naval force, was instructed, among other things, to ascertain if the ports of Japan were accessible." (Hildreth, Japan as It was and Is, 496); Maclay, Hist. Navy II, 120; "In an especial manner, you will take the utmost care to ascertain if the ports of Japan are accessible, Should the commissioner incline to make the effort of gaining access there, you will hold your squadron at his disposition for that purpose; and should he decline to do so, you may yourself, if you see fit, persevere in the design, yet not in such a manner as to excite a hostile feeling, or a distrust of the government of the United States." (Orders of Biddle pub. in Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.)

12. Biddle to Sec. Navy, G. Bancroft, 25 Dec. 1845, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.

13. Biddle to Sec. Navy, 21 Jan. 1846 (East India let. bk.)

14. Biddle on Vincennes at Canton River, 10 April 1846 (East India Let. Bk.)

15. Biddle on Vincennes to Sec. Navy, 2 July 1846, East India Let. Bk.

16. Biddle to Sec. Navy, 31 July 1846, East India Squadron Let. Bk., Navy Arch.; Hildreth, Japan as It was and Is, 498; Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, pp. 64-70, 32d Cong. 1st Sess. gives much information and on page 68 will be found Japanese reply to Biddle; Robert McCoy under oath on April 30, 1849 told Captain Geisinger that the Japanese told him that "at the City of Yedo, a common soldier

16. Continued.
had knocked down and American Commodore, and that the Americans had taken no notice of it: then why should they take any notice of us, we being poor sailors. * * * I never heard that an American Commodore had been knocked down by a common soldier at Yedo until I heard it from our guard at Nangasacki." (Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59 pp.15, 18, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.); "You will as soon as practicable carry into effect as far as you can the instructions given you relative to China and Japan." (Sec. Navy to Biddle, Jan. 6, 1846, Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.)

17. Biddle to Sec. Navy 31 July 1846, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.; Nat. Intell. 15 March, 1847; Nav. Inst. Proc. June, 1911, 244; Ranald "McDonald had the distinction of establishing a school of interpreters who, when the time came, were able to render valuable service to Biddle (1846), Glyn (1849) and Perry (1853-1854)." (Hadland Davis Japan 231); Griffis, Perry, 276; "While Biddle was at Yedo, though unknown to him, there were quite a few American sailors held in some form of durance as spies, or for attempts to escape from the islands. In addition to the shipwrecked survivors of the Ladoga and the Lawrence there was the famous Ranald McDonald of Astoria, who may, with good reason, be regarded as the first American resident of Japan. He was the son of a Scotsman and an Indian woman, who, when off the coast of Japan, had insisted on being put ashore in a small boat. He was, of course, imprisoned, but became, nevertheless, the first teacher of English to a few Japanese who sought his help. His 'cage' at Nagasaki is said to have been a 'house of reception, lit with wax candles on low square stands. Men of all orders came to see and talk with the first teacher of English in Japan.'" (Gowen, Out. Hist. Japan, 292); "The Preble had visited Nagasaki, in pursuance to my instructions of January 31st and relieved from confinement the seamen of the American Whaler Lagoda and an adventurer, named Ranald McDonald, who left the Whaler Plymouth, Captain Edwards, of Sag Harbor, N.Y., on the Coast of Japan, and was also in confinement there." (Geisinger to Sec. Navy, 11 May 1849, East India Squad. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); For information of Ranald MacDonald see "The Friend" of Honolulu, Oct. 1, 1849 id, Dec. 20, 1849; Griffis', Townsend Harris, 2; Honolulu Advertiser, May 17, 1928; Dye's McDonald of Oregon, 394; Hildreth, Japan As It Was and Is, 503; Nat. Intell., Aug. 13, 1849; Nitobe, Japanese Nation, 272; R. E. Lewis, Educational Conquest of the Far East; Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.

18. See Chapter XV, Vol. II of this History describing the Mexican War in California and West Mexican Coast.

19. Nat. Intell. Aug. 18, 1846; Nat. Intell. Jan. 29, 1847; Nat. Intell. March 15, 1847; Foster, Amer. Dip. in the Orient, 143; Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXI, 554; Nav. Inst. Proc. June, 1911, 244; Hildreth, Japan as It was and Is, 496.

20. Hildreth, Japan as It was and Is, 496.

21. Biddle to Sec. Navy 31 July 1846, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.; M. C. Arch.; II Maclay, Hist. Navy 120; Clark, Stevens, Alden, Krafft, Short Hist. Navy, 226.

22. Richard Hildreth, Japan, As It Was and Is, 496-498.

23. An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Dec. 6, 1847; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 247-248; Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXI, 554, 952; Nav. Inst. Proc., Sept. 1924, 1478-1480; Nat. Intell. Jan. 22, 29 and March 15, 1847; Nitobe, Inter.Bet. U.S. and Japan, 33-34; Bayard Taylor, Japan in our Day, 22-23; Griffis, Matthew C. Perry, 276; For Biddle's account see Biddle to Sec. Navy, 31 July 1846, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch. and Sen. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong. 1st Sess. 64-66.

24. Muster Rolls; "I have also received a letter from Captain Paulding enclosing one to him from Ward Room officers of the Vincennes on the subject of that ship's complement of officers and expressing a desire that a Lieutenant of Marines, nor a chaplain nor a Professor of Mathematics may go out in that ship. It is not intended to order a Professor to her; and if a Lieutenant of Marines be ordered you may detach him. A chaplain has been ordered and has joined her. As the Navy has this class of officers, it is necessary to employ them. I shallnot, therefore, detach him." (Sec. Navy George Bancroft to Biddle, 24 May 1845, Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.)

25. An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Dec. 6, 1847. See also Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXI, 554; Nat. Intell. Jan. 29 and March 15, 1847; Brinkley, Hist. Jap. People, 663; Nitobe, Japanese Nation, 268-270.

26. Biddle to Sec. Navy, 31 July 1846, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.; Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXI, 554; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 33-34; Sen. Doc. 1st Sess. 32d Cong. Vol. IX.

27. Hadland Davis, Japan, 232. This view of Biddle's acts has not been accepted by all. His assault by a Japanese soldier evidently hurt the prestage of the United States in Japan (see Note 16); "Captain Paulding [of Vincennes] brought with him despatches for the legation from Commodore Biddle, enclosing the reply of the Japanese government to the proposals made by him, in the name of the

27. Continued.
President, for opening commercial and friendly relations between the United States and Japan. It appears that the overture was positively rejected, and that the commodore was even treated with some degree of personal indignity." (A. H. Everett at Macao to Sec. of State James Buchanan, 26 Oct. 1846, Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.); "The attempt of the Commodore to open a negotiation was perhaps not made with all the discretion that might have been desired, and has placed the subject in a rather less favorable position than that in which it stood before. It is not impossible, however, that some new combination of circumstances may present itself during my residence here which may increase the prospect of success. In that case I shall with much pleasure avail myself of the power confided in me to renew the attempt to conclude a treaty. This result, could it be effected, would certainly be of no slight importance to the foreign relations of the country." (Mr. Everett at Macao to Sec. State Buchanan, 5 Jan. 1847, Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.)

28. Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 249-255; II Maclay Hist. Navy, 120; Information from U.S. Commissioner to China J. W. Davis caused Geisinger to send the Preble to Japan about the Lagoda of New Bedford and to demand release of prisoners. (Geisinger to Sec. Navy, 27 Jan. 1849, East India Squad. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); Commodore Geisinger on Jan. 31, 1849 ordered Commander James Glynn with the Preble "to Bay of Nangasaki" (sic) "to obtain release of fifteen seamen" and if necessary to "proceed to the Bay of Yedo" and communicate "with the Imperial Court." "You are instructed to make a firm, temperate and respectful demand of that Court for the immediate release, and surrender to you, of the above-mentioned prisoners."; (Geisinger to Glynn, 31 Jan. 1849, India Squad. Let. Bk., Navy Arch); Brinkley, Hist. Japanese People, 663.

29. Muster Rolls; Orderly Sergeant John Culp died 24 July 1849 and was succeeded by Corporal Reuben Cook. (Muster Roll, 1 Oct. 1848 to 24 Jan. 1850 signed by Corporal Reuben Cook).

30. Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess; Nat. Intell. Jan. 7, 1851; Hitobe, Inter. Rel. U.S. and Japan, 36. See also Nat. Intell. Oct. 17, 27, 1849; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 249-255; Hildreth Japan As It Was And Is, 500.

31. Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 500.

32. Senate Ex. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess; Nat. Intell.

32. Continued.
July 20, Oct. 17, 1849; Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXI, 953, 1478; Nitobe, Inter. Rel. U.S. and Japan, 36; Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, 22-23; Maclay, Hist. Navy II, 120; Clark, Stevens, Alden, Krafft, Short Hist. Navy, 227; Hadland Davis, Japan, 231; Griffis, Perry, 277-278; Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 502; "The cruise of the Preble was altogether successful. The release and surrender of these seamen, under the circumstances, is probably the first time in which the stubborn policy of the Japanese has yielded to the demand of Foreigners." (Geisinger to Sec. Navy, 18 June 1849, East India Squad. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); The Preble sailed from Macao Roads on June 9, 1849 and from Hong Kong on June 11, 1849, for San Francisco, Calif. "The Sandwich Islanders, brought from Japan, who were at Hong Kong at an expense to the Government, were afforded a passage in her to California, from whence they can readily reach their own country. The other seamen, released from Japan, have shipped on different merchant vessels." (Geisinger to Sec. Navy, 18 June, 1849, East India Squad. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.)

33. Nat. Intell. Dec. 12, 1849; See also Nat. Intell. Aug.13, 1849; Nat. Intell. Oct. 27, 1849, Dec. 11, 1859; Nat. Intell. Sept. 6, 1849; Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII; Nav. Inst. Proc., Sept. 1924, 1478-1480; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 249; Sen. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess., 2-63; Griffis, M. C. Perry, 277-278; "Seven of them Sandwich Islanders." (Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 499).

34. Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXI, 958; Chinese Repository, July, 1849; "Captain Glynn intends to recommend to the President to make Lew Chew a naval station." (Nat. Intell., 27 Oct. 1849); Nat. Intell., Jan. 7, 1851; For Glynn's letter to Fillmore and other matters see Senate Exec. Doc. No. 59, pp. 74-78, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.; On May 8, 1849 Acting Secretary of the Navy L. Warrington approved Commodore David Geisinger's "conduct in regard to the American Whaler Lagoda wrecked on the coast of Japan" expressed the Department's "gratification at the generous aid and attention afforded to the distressed American seamen of that ship by Mr. Brown, the Consul of His Majesty the King of the Netherlands and particularly by Mr. Levyssohn, the Dutch Superintendent of Trade at Decima." (Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); On Oct. 25, 1849 Sec. Navy Wm. Ballard Preston wrote Geisinger expressing "the high satisfaction of the Department, at the discreet and proper manner in which the proceedings of the U.S.S. Preble were conducted at Nagasaki, Japan which resulted in the release and surrender of the seamen of the American Whaler Lagoda." (Confidential Let.

34. Continued.
Bk., Navy Arch.); In 1849 Aaron Haight Palmer of New York, Director of the American and Foreign Agency of N.Y. (1830-1847) sent memorials to the President and Secretary of State regarding commercial relations with the East. Backed by New York and Baltimore merchants. In his letter to Secretary Clayton, 4 measures "on the plan of opening Japan" and recommended a "blockade of Yedo Bay" if necessary. (Nitobe, The Japan Nation, 275; Nat. Intell. Sept. 6, 1849); To rescue these [Americans], as well as to repair the failure of Biddle, Commander Glynn was sent early in 1849. After some preliminary difficulties, during which the Japanese made some threats of an offensive demonstration, the prisoners were delivered up to the American ship, the Preble. On returning to the United States, Commander Glynn strongly advised the government to press further for the establishment of intercourse with Japan, in the interests of civilization as well as of American commerce. He pleaded further that this should be carried out by "naval officers of tact" and that proper steps should be taken to conciliate the Dutch and to allay the suspicions of the British. It was in consequence of this appeal, as well as in accordance with the personal policy of President Fillmore, that Commodore Aulick was sent in June, 1851, to obtain from Japan the threefold right to take off shipwrecked sailors, to obtain supplies for the ships, and to trade at one or more of the Japanese ports. Aulick apparently was not one of the "naval officers of tact," for within the year he was recalled. (Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 292-293); For Glynn's letter to Fillmore and other matters see Senate Exec. Doc. No. 59, pp. 74-78, 32d Cong., 1st Sess.

35. See Chapters of Volume II Chapters XIII, XIV, XV.

36. Tomes, Americans in Japan, 1; See also Charles MacFarlane Japan, 108-110; No sooner had Perry left than the Russians appeared. (Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 59); other nations were considering an expedition similar to that led by Perry. (Russia for instance) (Nat. Intell. Dec. 10, 1852); "That Oriental sentiment which, hardened by the usuage and habit of centuries has dictated the inveterate policy of national isolation in Japan." (An.Rep. Sec. Navy, Dec. 11, 1852, which also discusses the preliminary plans for organizing Perry's expedition); See also President Fillmore's Message regarding Perry's Expedition (Nat. Intell. Dec. 7, 1852); Maclay, Hist. Navy, II, 121; Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 507-508.

37. Senate Exec. Doc. No. 59, pp. 80-82, 32d Cong., 1st Sess; Palmer, Doc. and Facts Illus. Origin Mission to Japan,

37. Continued.
5,22; Davis, Origin of Japan, Ex., 7; Amer. Hist. Rec. III, 148-149, 294-297; Sen. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess. 57, 74, 80-82; Nav. Let. Bk. Exec. Let. Jan.-May, 1851, 123; Nav. Inst. Proc. June, 1911, 257; The Command of the expedition from the United States to Japan, sent out in 1851, was thus first entrusted to Commodore Aulick, who arrived in Japan, in the summer of that year, but he was recalled soon afterwards, and the position given to Commodore Mattew Calbraith Perry. (F. W. Williams, Life and Letters of S. Wells Williams, 183); Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXIII, 1476; II Maclay, Hist. Navy, 121; "We got underway from Old Point Comfort with steam and without sail" on June 8, 1851. (Aulick to Sec. Navy, 8 June 1851, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch); "During the past year the attention of this department, in conjunction with the Department of State, has been directed to the employment of the East India Squadron in an enterprise of great moment to the commercial interests of the country - the endeavor to establish relations of amity and commerce with the Empire of Japan. The long interdict which has denied to strangers access to the ports or territory of that country, and the singularly inhospitable laws which its government has adopted to secure this exclusion, having been productive, of late years, of gross oppression and cruelty to citizens of the United States, it has been thought expedient to take some effective measure to promote a better understanding with this populous and semibarbarous empire; to make the effort not only to obtain from them the observance of the rights of humanity to such of our people as may be driven by necessity upon their coasts, but also to promote the higher and more valuable end of persuading them to abandon their unprofitable policy of seclusion, and gradually to take a place in that general association of commerce in which their resources and industry would equally enable them to confer benefits upon others, and the fruits of a higher civilization upon themselves. The extension of the domain of the United States to the shores of the Pacific, the rapid settlement of California and Oregon, the opening of the highway across the isthmus of Central America, the great addition to our navigation employed in trade with Asiatic nations, and the increased activity of our whaling ships in the vicinity of the northern coasts of Japan, are now pressing upon the consideration of this government the absolute necessity of reviewing our relations to those Eastern communities which lie contiguous to the path of our trade. The enforcement of a more liberal system of intercourse upon China has met the approval of the civilized world, and its benefits are seen and felt not less remarkably in the progress of that ancient empire itself,

37. Continued.
than in the activity which it has already imparted to the pursuit of Eastern commerce China is awaking from the lethargy of a thousand years to the perception of the spirit of the present era, and is even now furnishing her quota to the adventure which distinguishes and stimulates the settlement of our western coast. These events have forced upon the people of America and Europe the consideration of the question, how far it is consistent with the rights of the civilized world to defer to those inconvenient and unsocial customs by which a nation, capable of contributing to the relief of the wants of Humanity, shall be permitted to renounced that duty; whether any nation may claim to be exempt from the admitted Christian obligation of hospitality to those strangers whom the vocations of commerce or the lawful pursuits of industry may have incidentally brought in need of its assistance; and the still stronger case, whether the enlightened world will tolerate the infliction of punishment or contumelious treatment upon the unfortunate voyager whom the casualties of the sea may have compelled to an unwilling infraction of a barbarous law. These are questions which are every day becoming more significant. That Oriental sentiment which, hardened by the usage and habit of centuries, has dictated the inveterate policy of national isolation in Japan, it is very apparent, will not long continue to claim the sanctity of a national right to the detriment of the cause of universal commerce and civilization, at this time so signally active in enlarging the boundaries of human knowledge and the diffusion of comfort over the earth. The day has come when Europe and America have found an urgent inducement to demand of Asia and Africa the rights of hospitality of aid and comfort, shelter and succor, to the men who pursue the great highroads of trade and exploration over the globe. Christendom is constrained by the pressure of an increasing necessity to publish its wants and declare its rights to the heathen; and in making its power felt, will bring innumerable blessings to every race which shall acknowledge its mastery. The government of the United States has happily placed itself in the front of this movement; and it may be regarded as one of the most encouraging guarantees of its success, that the expedition which has just left our shores takes with it the earnest good wishes, not only of our own country, but of the most enlightened communities of Europe. The opening of Japan has become a necessity, which is recognized in the commercial adventure of all Christian nations, and is deeply felt by every owner of an American whale-ship, and every voyager between California and China. This important duty has been consigned to the commanding officer

37. Continued.
of the East India Squadron, a gentleman in every respect worthy of the trust reposed in him, and who contributes to its administration the highest energy and ability, improved by long and various service in his profession. Looking to the magnitude of the undertaking, and the great expectations which have been raised, both in this country and in Europe, in reference to its results, the casualties to which it may be exposed and the necessity to guard it, by every precaution within the power of the government, against the possiblity of a failure, I have thought it proper, with your approbation, to increase the force destined to this employment, and to put at the disposal of Commodore Perry a squadron of unusual strength and capability. I have, therefore, recently added to the number of vessels appropriated to the command, the line-of-battle ship Vermont, the corvette Macedonian and the Steamer Alleghany. These ships, together with the sloop-of-war Vandalia, originally intended to be assigned to the squadron, and with the ships now on that station - the steamer Susquehanna and the sloops-of-war Saratoga and Plymouth - a portion of which are now near to the term of their cruise, will constitute a command adapted, we may suppose, to any emergency which the delicate nature of the trust committed to the Commodore may present. It is probable that the exhibition of the whole force which will be under the command of Commodore Perry during the first year, will produce such an impression upon a government and people who are accustomed to measure their respect by the array of power which accompanies the demand of it, as may enable him to dispense with the vessels whose term of service is drawing near to a close, and that they may be returned to the United States without any material prolongation of their cruise." (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1852); Glynn wrote in 1851 that "some Japanese waifs who had been picked up at sea by the bark Auckland, Captain Jennings, and brought to San Francisco attracted the attention of Captain Aulick." On May 9, 1851 Aulick wrote that the Government take advantage of sending these Japanese back to open relations with Japan. Daniel Webster, Secretary of State agreed with Aulick. (Nitobe, The Japanese Nation, 276-277); Joseph Heco (?) was one of those picked up at sea by an American bark, the Auckland in 1851. He lived in San Francisco, where he learned the language and some business. He was brought to Washington and to the Atlantic cities for some weeks, and, in 1859, left the States for Japan, where, as a naturalized American, he became a merchant in Yokohama. These are a few of several shipwrecked Japanese in America, whose annals are too short and simple, and in most cases too obscure to be recorded here. (Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan,

37. Continued.

157-159); "The crew of another American vessel, wrecked at Japan, were recently taken to Batavia by a Dutch vessel, from Nagasaki. It is supposed that on the arrival at Singapore of an American frigate and a steamer, daily expected, the Hon. J. Balestier, U.S. Commissioner, will visit the Court of Jeddo, on a mission from the United States." (Nat. Intell., May 10, 1851, publishing advices from China by way of San Francisco and the Isthmus up to Feb. 4, 1851); The St. Mary's, it was thought would be despatched as soon as the troubles in Chili were settled, to San Francisco, for the purpose of taking home certain Japanese, who have been promised a passage by our government. (Nat. Intell., Nov. 11, 1851) The Marines of the St. Mary's were under Command of First Lieut. George R. Graham; See also Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 293; Blakeslee, Japan and Japanese-American Relations, 325.

38. Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 256-257; The Marines of the Susquehanna were commanded by Captain William B. Slack; those of the Saratoga by First Lieut. M. R. Kintzing; those of the Plymouth were in charge of Orderly Sergeant William Grant. (M. C. Muster Rolls)

39. Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 257; II Maclay Hist. Navy, 121; The Susquehanna sailed from Norfolk in June, 1851 by way of Rio Janeiro, conveying to that place M. Macedo, late Minister of Brazil to U.S., R.C. Schenck, U.S. Minister to Brazil and J.S. Pendleton charge to Argentine. (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Wm. A. Graham, November 29, 1851).

40. "Commodore Perry, we learn has been appointed to the command of the East India Squadron." (Nat. Intell., Jan. 30, 1852); Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 258-259; Aulick "was recalled when en route, to face a charge based on a false report". (III Spears, Hist. Navy, 443); II Maclay, Hist. Navy 121; Commodore Aulick explains the charges in his letter to Sec. Navy of 17 Feb. 1852, East India Let. Bk., Navy Arch.

41. Senate Exec. Doc. No. 59, 32d Cong., 1st Sess, pp. 80-82; Nat. Intell., April 26, 1852, 3; The "government of the United States determined to make a formal application to that of Japan to establish intercourse between the two nations and to despatch it by a fleet sufficiently large and well-appointed to insure a proper reception" (Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, 23-25.); Aulicks orders dated 31 May, 1851 by Sec. Navy all in Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.; "Accompanying his letter you will receive one from the Hon. Daniel Webster, Secretary of State, in relation to duties intrusted to you by the

41. Continued.
President of the United States." (Sec. Navy Will A. Graham to John H. Aulick, 2 June 1851, Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.)

42. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 254.

43. Inazo Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 140; Jonathan Goble was enlisted as a private in the United States Marine Corps, Dec. 22, 1851, by Brevet Major Jno. Geo. Reynolds for a term of four years. Goble was born in Wayne, County of Stuben, New York, and when enlisted, gave his age as twenty-four years. He was five feet nine and a half inches tall, with hazel eyes, dark brown hair, light complexion, and gave his occupation as that of farmer. His date of discharge is given as May 8, 1855, Brooklyn, N.Y.

44. M. C. Arch.

45. M.C. Arch.

46. Henderson to Sec. Nav J. P. Kennedy, Oct. 18, 1852, M. C. Arch.

47. Nat. Intell., April 12, 1852.

48. Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 260; According to the Muster Rolls the Marine Officer of the Susquehanna at this time was Brevet Captain William B. Slack; the Marines of the Saratoga were commanded by First Lieutenant M. R. Kintzing while those of the Plymouth were in charge of Orderly Sergeant William Grant. The Muster Rolls for May show that the Marines of the Princeton were commanded by Second Lieutenant James H. Jones; the Marines of the Mississippi were in charge of Orderly Sergeant William Tancred; while there are no muster rolls for the Supply. (Muster Rolls, M.C. Arch); "Commodore Perry, we learn, has been appointed to command of the East India Squadron." (Nat. Intell., 30 Jan. 1852); Lieutenant Arthur Sinclair, who commanded the Supply was the grandfather of Mrs. George Barnett, wife of Major General Commandant George Barnett; Orders to Perry dated 13 Nov. 1852 "The special mission to Japan, with which you have been charged by the Government will require all your firmness and prudence; in respect to which the Department entertains the fullest confidence that they will be adequate for any emergency." "In prosecuting the objects of your mission to Japan, you are invested with large discretionary powers and you are authorized to employ despatch-vessels, interpreters, Kroomen, or natives and all other means which you may deem necessary to enable

48. Continued.
you to bring about the desired results." (Sec. Navy John P. Kennedy, 13 Nov. 1852, Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.)

49. Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 261; The Muster Rolls for this month show that Second Lieutenant Jacob Read commanded the Marines of the Vandalia. There are no Muster Rolls for the other vessels for this month. The Muster Roll for February carries the name of Second Lieutenant James H. Jones on the Macedonian; the Roll of Sept. 1853 shows Sergt. William A. Wilker on the Alleghany; while there are not muster rolls for the Vermont and Southampton anywhere near these dates. (Muster Rolls, M. C.Arch.)

50. Nat. Intell., October 18, 27 and November 29, 1852; Nav. Inst. Proc., June 1911, 261; The Marine officer of the Princeton in October, 1852 was Second Lieutenant James H. Jones; The Marines of the Mississippi in October 1852 were commanded by Brevet Major Jacob Zeilin with 1st Lt. George F. Lindsay and 1st Lt. William Butterfield as junior officers; those of the Powhatan were commanded by Brevet Captain Robert Tansill. (Muster Rolls, M.C.Arch.)

51. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 79-80; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 261.

52. Tomes, The Amer. in Japan, 2; Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, 23-25; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 80; Griffis, Perry's visit to Japan, 309; Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXIII, 1476; II Maclay, Hist. Navy 121.

53. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 81.

54. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 133; Tomes, Amer. in Japan, 65-67; Griffis, M. C. Perry, 281-342.

55. Here Bayard Taylor joined the squadron as Masters Mate; Griffis, Perry's Visit to Japan, 309; In May, 1853, the Marines of the Susquehanna were commanded by Brevet Major Jacob Zeilin; those of the Mississippi by Brevet Captain William B. Slack, his Orderly Sergeant being William Tancred; those of the Saratoga were in charge of First Sergeant William F. Steele; and those of the Plymouth in charge of Orderly Sergeant William Grant (Muster Rolls). Captain Slack had been transferred to the Mississippi from the Susquehanna on May 9, 1853 (Muster Rolls); On March 8, 1860 Slack wrote the Sec. Navy about his brevet pay and double rations while on Susquehanna on "cruise to the East Indies, China, and Japan Seas" and his brevet pay on the Mississippi on same cruise. He enclosed copy of his orders signed by Colonel Commandant Archibald

55. Continued.
Henderson, 22 March 1851 stating that "as this frigate [Susquehanna] has nearly the strength of a full company exclusive of the other guards of that Squadron, you are detailed with your brevet rank." (Marine Officers Let. Bk. Navy Arch).

56. Perry to Sec. Navy, 2 June 1853; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 147-149; Griffis, M. C. Perry, 281-342.

57. Perry to Sec. Navy, 2 June 1853, East India Squad. Let. Bk.; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 150; See also Williams Life and Letters of S. Wells Williams, 184-187; For visit to Loo-Choo Islands in 1816 see Voy. to West Coast of Corea and the Great Loo-choo Island, Basil Hall.

58. S. Wells Williams Journal ed. by F. W. Williams, 11.

59. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 161; See Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911 that states Chaplain George Jones of the Mississippi was in charge of party.

60. Log of Susquehanna; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 158; See also, Heine, Graphic Scene of Japan Ex.

61. Tomes, Americans in Japan, 97-98; Williams in his Journal, 9-10 says Regent visited Perry on May 28th.

62. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 187; See also Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 263; "A company of Marines, the Mississippi's band, Commodore Perry in a sedan shair, the coolies with the presents behind him and a Marine on each side of the chair, the officers in undress uniform, the Susquehanna's band, Marines, etc. amounting in all to over 200 men, made up the procession." (Williams Journal of Perry Ex., 20).

63. Tomes, Americans in Japan, 121-122.

64. Hawks, U.S. Jap. Ex., I, 188.

65. Spaulding, Japan and around the World, 120-121.

66. Nat. Intell., November 3, 1853.

67. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 192.

68. Hawks, U.S. Japan, Ex., I, 195; Perry "with the Susquehanna (now the flagship) and Mississippi visited Port Lloyd, Peel Island, situated some eight hundred miles eastward of Nagasaki. Here he purchased a tract of land for a coaling depot," etc. (Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 263); Commodore Perry, on the Susquehanna, "arrived in

68. Continued.
the Bonin harbor from the Loo Choo Islands on June 14 in the year 1853." (Lionel Berners Cholmondeley, Hist. of Bonin Islands, 90); The U.S.S. Dolphin arrived at San Francisco in November, 1850, having sailed from China in July and touching at Manila, and Bonin Islands and Hawaiian Islands. (Nat. Intell., Jan. 8, 1851; Log of Dolphin)

69. Perry to Sec. Navy, 25 June 1853, East India Squad. Let. Bk.; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 195; Williams Journal of Perry Ex., 27.

70. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 204; On June 15 "two parties under Mr. (Bayard) Taylor and Dr. Fahs left early this morning to explore." (Williams Journal, 29).

71. Muster Rolls.

72. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 204; See also M.C. Arch. for his record; In a letter dated on board the frigate Susquehanna, "Port Lloyd, Peel Island, June 15, 1853," Commodore M. C. Perry appointed Nathaniel Savory as "Agent to look after and take charge of certain live stock landed from the ship for the purpose of improving the breed of animals," of the Bonin Islands, and also as "Agent for the U.S. Squadron under my command at the Bonin Islands to look after the comfort and interest of any one who may land at the Islands from the said Squadron and to take charge of all property belonging to said Squadron or to the United States - and you are invested with authority to act accordingly. One man John Smith belonging to the U.S. Naval Service will be landed from this ship to assist you in the duties entrusted to your charge and he will have orders to refer to you for advice and instructions. I have caused your name to be placed upon the books of this ship for pay and provisions and you are consequently attached to the Navy of the United States and possessed of all the privileges and immunities to be derived therefrom." John Smith was an ordinary seaman and Perry gave him his orders dated in June 1853. (Cholmondeley, History of Bonin Islands, 95-97).

73. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 214.

74. Hawks, U.S. Japan, Ex. I, 216.

75. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 228; Griffis, Perry's Visit to Japan, 309; See Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 30-31, for the description of a meteor and the "credulous corporal of Marines"; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 263. Williams in his Journal wrote they sailed from

75. Continued.
Napa on July 4. (p.46).

76. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 230, 232, 272; Griffis, M. C. Perry, 281-342; Inazo Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 46; Jane, Imperial Japanese Navy, 13-14; Nav. Inst. Proc. June, 1911, 264; "on July 7, 1853, entered the Bay of Uraga." (Gowen, Japan, 294).

77. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 237; Journal of Williams, 50.

78. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 249; There were considerable speculations among the officers to how the Japanese would receive them. The day before the landing an officer remarked "to Major Zeilin, of the Marine Corps (a fine old soldier), 'Well, Major, they have our cages ashore?' 'No, Sir; no caging tomorrow', said he, 'it will be fight to the death!'" (Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 152-165); Williams Journal of Perry Ex., 57.

79. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 252; Griffis, Perry's Visit to Japan, 334; See also Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, 23-25; Tomes, The Americans in Japan, 160-161; Powell, Road to Glory, 309-311 contains a very interesting account of Perry's landing; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 266-267; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 267 sets forth Perry's words quoting from Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 34, 33rd Cong., 2d Sess., pp. 50-51; "At Kurihama, two miles south of Uraga, Commissioners were appointed to receive the letter on July 14th. Perry Park marks the spot today where rises an obelisk inscribed by Marquis Ito." (Davis, Japan, 235).

80. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 252; Williams' Journal of Perry Ex. 58-59.

81. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 253; Williams' Journal of Perry Ex. 58-59.

82. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 253.

83. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 254; for plans to mark this spot with a monument, See A and N Reg. February, 23, 1901 142. Zeilin was "Fleet Marine Officer in Perry's Expedition to Japan. He was the second person to touch the shore at the formal landing of the naval forces at Yokohama on July 14, 1853 and was one of those who received the silver medal presented by the merchants of Boston to the naval force that unsealed the Empire of Japan." (Officers Who Served in the Civil War, Powell and Shippen, 480).

84. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 254; Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 152-165; Gowen, Japan, 296.

85. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 254; "At the head of the American party was a company of Marines commanded by Major Zeilin." (Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 267); "Fifteen launches and cutters were got ready, from which 330 persons, officers, seamen, Marines and musicians were landed." (Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 517); "Buchanan" by Lewis, 57; "At the head of the American party was a company of Marines commanded by Major Zeilin." (Nav. Inst Proc., June, 1911, 267); "400 officers, seamen and Marines" were landed (III Cooper, Naval Hist. 100); Clark, Stevens, Alden, Krafft, Short Hist. Navy, 231; "about 300 people, say 112 Marines, 40 musicians, 40 officers and a hundred or more sailors," wrote S. Wells Williams in his Journal, 59; Under date of July 14, [1853] [Matthew Calbraith] Perry has this entry in his notes: "This being the day appointed for my reception on shore, and every preparation having been made for landing a formidable escort composed of officers, seamen, and Marines, from the respective ships, about 400 in number, all well armed and equipped, * * *" (Paullin, Dip. Nego., Amer. Nav. Officers, 265).

86. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 254; "Commodore Perry left under a salute." (Journal of Perry Ex., Williams, 59).

87. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 254-255; Griffis, Perry's Visit to Japan, 334; "On reaching the shore the American Guard, consisting of four hundred Marines and sailors, lined up to salute the Commodore." (III Spears, Hist. Navy, 455-456); "One hundred Marines, whose figures were in striking contrast to the diminutive Japanese." (II Maclay, Hist. Navy, 129); "The Marines, headed by Major Zeilin, led off, he going ahead with a drawn sword." (Journal of Perry Ex., Williams, 60); all the Marines carried "charge of ball." (id.); "At 9:30 the Boats of the Squadron armed and equipped with the Guard of Marines, Band, Sailors, and officers assembled around this Ship. At 10 The Commander in Chief left the Ship, escorted by the Boats and bearing with him the letters of the President of the United States to the Emperor of Japan. On his leaving for the Shore a Salute of 13 guns was fired from this Ship. At 11. The Commander in Chief returned on board, and the boats repaired to their respective Ships. At 12. got underway and stood up the Bay, the Squadron following our motions." (Log of U.S. Steam Frigate Susquehanna, July 14, 1853) See also Griffis', M. C. Perry, 337-338.

88. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 255; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 268; II Maclay Hist. Navy, 131.

89. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 256; See also Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, for information of this visit to Gorihama. "In front of the houses prepared for the interview were two old brass four-pounders, apparently Spanish, and on each side a company of soldiers, those on one side armed with matchlocks, those on the other with old Tower muskets, with flint locks and bayonets." (Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 517).

90. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 261; "The letter being received, you will leave here." Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 269, The last sentence of the document "intimated they were to make sail immediately." (Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 64); Davis, Japan, 236. Perry to Sec. Navy, 9 Jan. 1854 and 14, 25 Jan. 22 Feb. 20 March, 1854, East India Squad. Let. Bk. Navy Arch.

91. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 261.

92. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 261.

93. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 261.

94. Hawks , U.S. Japan Ex., I, 263.

95. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 264.

96. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 265-267; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 269; Williams' Journal of Perry Ex., 66; "Boats of the Squadron surveying the Bay of Jeddo - Our present anchorage by order of the Commodore to be called 'American Anchorage.' Saratoga got underway to protect the surveying boats." (Log of Susquehanna, July 15, 1853).

97. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 267; "We estimated ourselves to be ten miles from Yedo." (Williams' Journal, Perry Ex., 66).

98. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 268-269; Williams' Journal, Perry Ex., 66-67.

99. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 271; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 269; Williams' Journal, Perry Ex., 69-70.

100. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 272.

101. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 274; Williams' Journal, Perry Ex., 71.

102. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 279; "at two o'clock Commodore Perry and suite, seventeen in all," went ashore to call on Regent and had dinner. (Williams' Journal, Perry Ex., 74-77).

103. Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 269; See Williams' Journal, Perry Ex., 81.

104. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 282.

105. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 282; In regard to this visit to Bonin Islands, the Plymouth (visit was to be about October 1, 1853) was directed by Commodore Perry "to inquire into the condition of the settlers, especially with respect to Nathaniel Savory and John Smith, two persons who had been enrolled on the books of the steamer Susquehanna." (Hawks U.S. Japan Ex., I, 282). The Coffin Group was named after the first American explorer in 1823.

106. Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 269-270.

107. Log of Plymouth in Navy Arch. cited in Nav. Inst. Proc., June 1911, 269-270; "Whilst the Plymouth was engaged in surveying the Bonin Islands, Lt. John Matthews with 13 of the crew, when in a boat, encountered a severe typhoon and were lost." (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Dec. 4, 1854; see also Cholmondeley, Hist. Bonin Islands, 105); The Plymouth left George Horton, a Quartermaster U.S. Navy, at his own request on the Bonin Islands. (id.); "When Commodore Perry was refitting at Hong Kong in the winter of 1853 on his return from his visit to Japan, he was not too well pleased when the Governor, Sir George Bonham, called on him one day and informed him that there was a little matter in connection with the Bonin Islands that he had been instructed by his Government to inquire about. * * * England * * * had no warrant whatever to extend her claim over the South Island. That island, though he had taken upon himself to name it Bailey Island, had never been visited by Captain Beechey, and undoubtedly had been previously named Coffin Island by Captain Coffin of an American whaler. The outcome of these reflections was that when the Commodore had come on to Hong-Kong from Japan he had told off Captain Kelly of the Plymouth to call at the Bonin Islands and to formally take possession of the S. Islands in the name of the United States. This, I may say, Captain Kelly did, and following Captain Beechey's example had a copper plate announcing the fact fixed to a sycamore tree near the landing stage." (Cholmondeley, Hist. Bonin Islands, 102-104); In April 1854 the Macedonian (Captain Abbot), on her way from Japan to Formosa, stopped at the Bonin Islands and delivered a letter, dated April 10, from Perry to Nathaniel Savory stating "the sovereignty of the Bonin Islands has not yet been settled." (Cholmondeley, Hist. Bonin Islands, 106-108); For Bonin Islands history see Cholmondeley, Hist. Bonin Islands and Griffis', M. C. Perry, 310-312, 420-421; The Ogasawara (Bonin) islands

107. Continued.
were formally occupied by the civil and military officers of the Mikado in 1875, and the people of various nationalities dwell peaceably under the sun-flag. An American lady-missionary and a passenger in the steamer San Pablo, Mrs. Anna Viele of Albany, spent from January 14th to 31st, 1855, at the Bonin Islands. She found of Savory's large family three sons and three daughters living. The old Flag of Stars and Stripes given to Savory by Commodore Perry is still in possession of his widow, and is held in great reverence by his children and grandchildren, all of whom profess allegiance to the United States. The boys, as soon as of age, go to Yokohama and are registered in the American consulate. One of the sons bears the name of Matthew Savory, so named by the Commodore himself when there. A grandson having been born a few days before the arrival of the San Pablo, Mrs. Viele was invited to name him. She did so, and Grover Cleveland Savory received as a gift a photograph of the President of the United States. Trees planted by the hand of the Commodore still bear luscious fruit. Though the cattle were long ago 'lifted' by passing whalers, the goats are amazingly abundant. (Griffis', M.C. Perry, 420-421 citing Asiatic Society of Japan, Transactions, Vol. IV, p. 3).

108. Nat. Intell., Nov. 3, 1853.

109. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 286; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 82-83.

110. Inazo Nitobe, Inter. Rel. U.S. and Japan, 52; The Chinese told Perry that the Revolution would "result in the overthrow of the Tartars." (Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 286).

111. Marine Corps History, Volume II, Chapter XVII.

112. Biddle to Sec. Navy, 21 Jan. 1846 (East India Let. Bk.); "Cum Sing-mun" (Sec. Navy to Aulick, 30 Nov. 1852, Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); "Cum Sing Moon" (Sec. Navy to Aulick, 29 Jan. 1853, Confidential Let. Bk., Navy Arch.); Cap-shuy-moon (Edmund Roberts, p. 130); "Cap-sin-moon, alias Cap-Shuy-moon or the Swift Water Passage." (id p. 140); "Cumsing Moon" (Log of U. S. Brig Dolphin, Sept. 20, 1849).

113. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 288.

114. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 302-303.

115. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 303; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 270.

116. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 303; Williams, Life of S. Wells Williams, 205.

117. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 303; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 85.

118. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 308; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 84-85; "Captain Pope with the Marine guard of this Ship and the Plymouth and accompanied by several of the officers went on shore on an official visit to the authorities of Loo Choo." (Log of Vandalia, November 9,1853).

119. S. Wells Williams' Journal of Perry Ex., 91-92.

120. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 310; "The Marines were sent ashore immediately and Perry left at half past eight o'clock." (Journal of S. Wells Williams, 94); "At 7:20 (a.m.) Commodore made signal 378 Capt. Lee, a party of officers, the Marines & Band landed at 8 a.m. as part of the escort for the Commo. on a visit to the Prince of Loochoo." At "11 - sent all boats on shore to bring off the Officers, Band & Marines who had escorted the Commodore on a visit to the Regent." The "Comdr Officers etc who had been in the suite of the Comdr in Chief returned to the ship at 2:30." (Log of Mississippi, 3 Feb. 1854).

121. "Surgeon Green and Chaplain Jones with a couple of men left the ship to visit the north end of the Island on a party of exploration for coal & minerals." (Log of Mississippi, 31 Jan. 1854); "the Explorers for coal returned bringing Specimen of 'coal blossom' from the Northern of the Island." (Log of Mississippi, 4 Feb. 1854); Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 311.

122. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 320; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 98.

123. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 321.

124. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 325; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 99.

125. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 326-327; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 99; Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 520.

126. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 327; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 100; Davis, Japan,238; "Passing Uraga and Perry Island, the seven vessels dropped anchor at the 'American anchorage,' not far from Yokosuka, (the little grass-plot looking out on the far-off sea). Unconsciously, the officers paced their decks, beneath the shadows of the twin tombs of Will Adams and his Japanese wife. From

126. Continued.
these very headlands, over which the English exile, who may have seen Shakespeare, took his evening walks two centuries before, he had perhaps seen in prophetic vision a sight like that below. Happy coincidence, that Perry's right-hand man, bore the same name, Adams!" (M.C. Perry. by Griffis, 353-354).

127. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 328; "Commdr Adams came on board & held an interview with some Japanese officials who came alongside." (Log of Powhatan, at False Bay 13, Feb. 1854); See also An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 4 Dec. 1854.

128. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 329; "Several Japanese officers came on board to confer with Capt. Adams," and "at Sunset the Japanese officers left the ship." (Log of Powhatan, 14 Feb. 1854).

129. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 330.

130. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 331.

131. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 332; "The Commodore moved aboard the Powhatan today (Feb. 18) but was too ill to do anything, and suffers a great deal of pain." (Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 107); "The Susquehanna hauled down the Broad Pennant and the Powhatan hoisted it." (Log of Mississippi, 18 Feb. 1854); "The Commo. came on board. Received a visit from the Japanese Authorities." Privates William Hall and John Smith transferred from the Susquehanna to this ship. (Log of Powhatan, 18 Feb. 1854).

132. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 333; "Capt. Adams and a party of Officers left in the Vandalia to communicate with the Authorities in Uraga." (Log of Powhatan, 21 Feb. 1854).

133. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 334; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 109-111.

134. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 335.

135. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 336.

136. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 337; "At 9:30 sent the Launch armed in charge of Lieut. Morris to protect the Surveying Boats." (Log of Mississippi, at Jedo Bay, 25 Feb. 1854).

137. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 338; "Got up steam and made preparations for getting underway a party of Japanese Officials on board inspecting Mag telegraph." (Log of Powhatan, at Jedo Bay, 27 Feb. 1854).

138. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 341.

139. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 342.

140. From copy of order pasted in Log Book of U.S. Steamer Mississippi (Commander S.S. Lee); Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 223-226; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 345.

141. Journal of Perry Ex., S. Wells Williams, 124.

142. Perry's Report, Navy Let. Bk., East India, China and Japan Squ'n, II, 129-134, Navy Arch, published in Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 34, 33rd Cong., 2d Sess., 125-126; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 346; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 272; Maclay, Hist. Navy, II, 203-204; Griffis, M. C. Perry, 361-362; "500 Officers seamen and Marines" landed (III Cooper, Naval Hist., 101); Davis, in his Japan, 238 is in error when he states "Nine hundred Officers, seamen, and Marines, armed to the teeth landed."; At 11:00 a.m. "four of our boats containing forty Marines and forty Seamen left the ship for the Powhatan to form part of Commodore Perry's escort to the Treaty House. * * * Brevet Captain [William B.] Slack in charge of the Marines. At 11:30 all the boats of the Squadron thus employed pulled from the Powhatan to the beach and landed the escort. At 12 Commodore Perry left the Powhatan for the shore under a salute of 17 guns from the Macedonian." At "12:20 a Salute of twenty-one guns was fired with the Boats Howitzer and on shore in honor of the Emperor, the Powhatan at the same time hoisting the Japanese Flag at the Main. A Salute of seventeen guns was also fired in honor of the Japanese Commissioners. At 4 the boats returned to the ship;" (Log of Mississippi, at Jedo Bay, March 8, 1854); At 11:00 a.m. "Captain [John] Pope left the ship with the boats 100 Men & Officers to form part of the escort for the Commo to land at the town of Yokohama. At 11:30 the boats forming the escort left the Flag Ship for shore. At 12 the Commo left for shore the Macedonian firing a salute of seventeen guns at Noon." "Boats and parties returned from shore" between 4:00 and 6:00 p.m. (Log of Vandalia, at Yokohama, Yedo Bay, 8 March 1954).

143. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 346; See also Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 239 et seq and September, 1924, 1478-1480; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 272; Maclay, Hist. Navy, II, 203-204; a wag in the Cleveland Plain Dealer anticipated the answer to the President's letter in facetious manner. (Nat. Intell., April 28, 1852); See also Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 124-125; Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 520.

144. Nat. Intell., July 4, 1854.

145. Enl. October 4, 1852 (M. C. Arch.).

146. Perry's Report, Navy Let. Bk., East India, China & Japan Squ'n, 129-134; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 272-273; Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 522.

147. Perry's Report, East India Squad. II, 129-134, Navy Arch. "I was moreover anxious for special reasons to acquire an interest in this Island to subserve some ulterior objects." (id.); Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 353-355; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 272-273.

148. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 353-355; Navy Let. Bk. East India , China & Japan Squ'n. 129-134; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 272-273; See also Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 126.

149. Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 235-240; See also Tomes, The Americans in Japan, 259-261; Navy Let Bk East India, China & Japan Squ'n. 129-134; Griffis, M. C. Perry, 362-363; "From Meridian to 4 P.M. Received on board a load of water from Shore in Japanese boats. At 2.45 called all hands to bury the dead. - 'read the funeral Service over the body of Robert Williams' late Private Marines and sent the body ashore for interment with an escort under the Command of Capt. Slack." (Log of Mississippi, at Jedo Bay, 9 March 1854).

150. Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 235-240; See also Tomes, Americans in Japan, 259-261; "Thus did the United States Marine, Williams, occupy his narrow bed within fifteen miles of Yedo, where Gongiu-sama declared once that no Christian should ever come; yea, that even the God of the Christians should die, if he came. Thus are old things passing away in Japan. Mr. Jones thinks he has done a great achievement." (Williams' Journal of Perry Ex., 128).

151. Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 235-240; See also Tomes, Americans in Japan, 259-261; See also Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 522.

152. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 353-355; See also Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 523; See Habersham's Last Cruise, 208 for information concerning four Americans of Perry's Squadron buried at Shimoda.

153. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 353.

154. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 355.

155. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 357; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 131-134; "At 10 the Boats of the Squadron containing the Articles intended as a Present to the Emperor of Japan and an escort of Officers, & Marines, collected near the Macedonian & at 10.10 Started for the Shore in charge of Captain Abbott." (Log of Mississippi, at Jedo Bay, 13 March 1854); the Log of the Powhatan, 13 March 1854, gives a full list of the presents and notes that "at 10 Capt Abbott with an escort of 24 boats and a detachment of Marines landed in charge of the following presents, viz.-".

156. Log of Mississippi, 14 March 1854.

157. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 362; Williams' Journal of Perry Ex., 140; "Commo and Suite with Escort of armed boats went on shore for an interview with Commissioners." (Log of Powhatan, 17 March, 1854).

158. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 364.

159. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 372; "At 10 a Squadron of 17 Boats containing the officers of the Escort and Marines, pulled in to the landing at 'Yokahama'. At 10.30 the Commo & Suite Left the Ship for the Shore." (Log of Powhatan, at Jedo Bay, 24 March 1854); "At about 10 the Gig Launch 1st & 2nd Cutters with officers & Marines left the ship to join the escort assembled, at the Flag-Ship. At 10.25 the escort landed at Yokohama. At 10.40 the Commodore landed." First Lieutenant James H. Jones "in command of Marines". (Log of Mississippi, at Jedo Bay, 24 March 1854).

160. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 375-376; Williams' Journal, Perry Ex., 149-150; The Marines of the Macedonian were commanded by First Lieutenant James H. Jones until March 18 when he was transferred to the Mississippi leaving Orderly Sergeant Charles N. Emerson in charge of the Marines of the Macedonian. (Muster Rolls, M.C.Arch.); "The Japanese visited the Macedonian & were Saluted by the Mississippi with 17 Guns. Hoisted the Imperial Flag at our Fore & the Commissioners at our Mizen." The "Japanese Commissioners came on board, attended by their Suite 70 in Number, visited the Ship and were entertained by Commo M.C. Perry on leaving the Ship were Saluted by the Vandalia with 17 Guns." (Log of Powhatan, 27 March 1854); "At 3 (P.M.) the Boats from Shore containing the Japanese Commissioner and Suite went alongside the Macedonian. At 3.05 we fired a Salute of 17 Guns in honor of his visit, and at 4 on his leaving for the Powhatan was saluted from the Macedonian with 17 guns. The Flag Ship wearing the Japanese Imperial Flag at the Fore

160. Continued.
& Mizen during the visit of the Commissions on board. At 6.20 the Saratoga Saluted him with 17 guns on his return to the shore." (Log of Mississippi, at Jedo Bay, 27 March 1854).

161. Malloy, Treaties, Conventions etc., I, 996-998; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 376-377; Treaty set forth in Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 523-525; John S. Foster, "A Century of American Diplomacy", 334; Griffis, M.C. Perry, 281-342; Gowen, Japan, 298-299; Nav. Inst. Proc., March-April, 1915, 444; See also Schouler, Hist. U.S. V, 314-315; III Cooper, Naval Hist., 101; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 150; "As Table half Masted the Colors to a Funeral from the Vandalia." (Log of Powhatan, 28 May 1854). Treat, Japan and The United States, 27.

162. Log of Mississippi, 29 March 1854.

163. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 380; In 1854 while Commodore Perry was negotiating with the Japanese government, and his fleet anchored at Yokohama, a village official named Ishikawa Han-yemon, received by him on board his flagship, asked him to write his autograph on a fan which he was then holding. The Commodore at once consulted and ordered his secretary to write the words "Be friendly to all Americans" instructing also his Chinese interpreter to put on the other side in Chinese characters a corresponding sentiment which read: "They all are brothers who live in the four corners of the world." This fan is now cherished as a family treasure by his descendant Mr. Ishikawa Toku-yemon." (Recollections of American Friendship by Saburo Shimada M.P. October, 1908, p. 7, copies presented to officers of the U.S. Fleet visiting Japan); Treaty in East India Let. Bk.; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 53; Navy Arch.; S. Wells Williams' Journal, 137-138 sets forth treaty; Dep. of State Arch.; Admiral David D. Porter wrote that "history records no more laudable event than the opening of Japan" etc. (United Service Mag. I, Jan. 1879, 8); III Cooper, Naval Hist., 101; See Rear Admiral Knapp in Nav. Inst. Proc., Sept. 1924, 1478-1480; Davis, Japan, 240; "At 12.30 the boats (Six) contg the Escort of Officers & Marines pulled to Landing at Yokahama. At 12.45 the Commo & Suite left the Ship for an interview with the Japanese Commissioners." (Log of Powhatan, at Jedo Bay, 31 March 1854); "On the part of America, Perry's treaty brought no satisfaction. Naval Officers laughed at his haughty demeanor during the negotiations; commercial men complained that trade did not develop at once." etc. (Nitobe, Japanese Nation, 282-283); Adams, Hist. Japan, I, 114; Treaty of March 31, 1854 (Malloy, Treaties, Conventions, etc., 1776-1909, I,

163. Continued.
996-998); The Shogun "signed the first Treaty between Japan and the United States on the 31st of March 1854. For this he was much blamed by his rivals, the Daimyos of Satsuma and Choshu, who accused him of dishonoring the Emperor Komei at Kyoto, whose hatred of foreigners was well known." (Japan, Our Ally, Crowdson, 10, British); Perry's Expedition "was an outcome of the inevitable westward migration of the Anglo-Saxon Race." (Japan, Our [British] Ally, Crowdson, 9); "We owe much to the United States. The United States was the country that entered first into a treaty with us; or, I say, that the United States was the country that awakened us from our sleep." (T. Megata in Lanman's Japanese in America, 86).

164. Navy Let. Bk., Mar. Off., 70.

165. Perry to Sec. Navy James C. Dobbin, 3 April 1854, East India and Japan Squad., Navy Arch.; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 393; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 274; "At 9.15 the Saratoga got underway and was cheered from each Ship, when abreast of this Ship she saluted with 13 Guns which was returned by 9, from this Ship." (Log of Powhatan, at Jedo Bay, 4 April 1854); "Make March 28, 1929, Historic" was the head-line on an editorial of the Honolulu Advertiser of March 31, 1926 for it was the "Diamond Jubilee of the signing of the treaty." The sloop of war Saratoga, arrived at Honolulu on April 29, 1854; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 158.

166. Muster Rolls.

167. Perry to Sec. Navy James C. Dobbin, Navy Let Bk East India, China & Japan Squ'n. II, 288-289; Commander Henry A. Adams left the Saratoga at the Hawaiian Islands and proceeded in a "more speedy conveyance" with the Perry Treaty and reached Washington on July 10, 1854. (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Dec. 4, 1854).

168. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 400.

169. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 401.

170. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 172.

171. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 424.

172. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 424-425.

173. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 425; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 183; "at 9 Brevet Captain Robert Tansill with two Marines went on shore at Simoda on duty by Commodore

173. Continued.
Perry's order" (Log of Powhatan, 9 May 1854).

174. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 425; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 183.

175. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 426; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 183

176. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 426.

177. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 430; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 185.

178. "At 11.30 Commo Perry & Suite went on board the Mississippi to receive a visit from the Japanese Officials, hauled down the Broad Pendant which was hoisted by the Mississippi." (Log of Powhatan, May 19, 1854); "At 12.20 the Governor of Hakodadi and Suite visited the ship to pay their respects to the Commander in Chief - At 12.30 made Signal No. 936 - Furled Sails - At 2 the Commodore left the Ship. On his arrival on board the Powhatan, hauled down the Broad Pennant and hoisted the Coach Whip!" (Log of Mississippi, May 19, 1854); Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex. I, 467; "I guess their first idea was at seeing the Marines drawn up on deck, that they had been entrapped, but erelong they were put at ease." (Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 189).

179. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 470; Williams in his Journal, 191 says call was made on May 22.

180. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 198. On June 8, Williams at Shimoda wrote that "the drawing of the Washington Monument was shown and the proposal made them to furnish a stone to put in it, adding that one had been procured at Hakodadi." (id. 204); "Rec'd on board from the Authorities 2 Blocks of Granite for the Washington Monument." (Log of Powhatan, June 2, 1854).

181. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 472.

182. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 473; Williams'Journal Perry Ex., 198.

183. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 477; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 202-203.

184. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 477.

185. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 477; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 203-205.

186. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 205.

187. Inazo Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 157-159; Some accounts say that the St. Mary's carried Sam Patch back to China; Nat. Intell., November 11, 1851 states that the St. Mary's was to be "despatched to San Francisco for the purpose of taking to their homes certain Japanese, who have been promised a passage by our government;" Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 340-486 states that Sam Patch was one of 16 Japs who had been picked up on the coast of California and taken to San Francisco, served on revenue cutter 12 months, then taken by St. Mary's to China and transferred to Susquehanna and that all of them except Sam Patch remained in China. Another account says that Sam Patch was one of the seven shipwrecked Japanese on whose account the Morrison made her voyage to Japan; Williams, Life and Letters of S. Wells Williams, 226; A cursory examination of the Logs of the St. Mary's when she arrived in China in 1850 and of the Logs of the Plymouth and Dolphin in China waters then, do not show any Japanese. "There is, for example, the Japanese found adrift and taken to China who became known as Sam Patch, because he was forever wailing 'Shimpai' ("Trouble")." (Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 291); The real Sam Patch was a lad widely known for daring leaps and dives. Born in 1807 in Rhode Island, he became a cotton spinner in Paterson, N.J. A jump from a bridge into the Passaic River brought him such notoriety that he traveled about leaping from bridges and diving from topmasts of ships. He was killed in 1829 when attempting a jump of 125 feet into the Genesee River; "The Story of Sam Patch" a poem by Seba Smith may have had something to do with the nick-naming of this Japanese Sam Patch. See article on "Sam Patch" by Major McClellan on last page of Honolulu Advertiser, May 28, 1926. S. Wells Williams in his Journal refers to Sam Patch.

188. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 486.

189. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 486; See also Inazo Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. & Japan, 157-159; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 140, which includes a footnote stating that Goble was "just such a man as would suggest a jin-rik-sha, being practical, plain and rather rough in his thought and action." C. F. Black, Young Japan, II, 312. A Japanese authority (Mr. Kurokawa) states that "the jin-rik-sha was first made in 1871, by two wainwrights in Tokyo." See Major McClellan's article in Honolulu Advertiser, 31 Jan. 1926.

190. Log of Powhatan, 12 June 1854.

191. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 211-212; "As Table at 5.30 the Japanese Commissioners visited the Ship, rec'd them and Exercised at general Quarters. raised Steam & Exhibited the Engines Working - Exercised one of the Howitzers with blank Cartridges they then left the Ship to attend an entertainment on board the Mississippi." (Log of Powhatan, at Simoda, June 16, 1854).

192. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 213.

193. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 489-490; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 227.

194. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 491.

195. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 492.

196. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 228-229.

197. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 232-233.

198. Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 231-239; "Sent a party of 15 Marines ashore pr Order of Commdr." (Log of Powhatan, at Napa Kiang Roads, July 6, 1854).

199. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 495.

200. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 495.

201. "The Commodore also told them he wished a bell to hang in the top of the Monument at Washington; and I really believe he thought more of the procurement of this bell than the settlement of the case of murder and mob. The relief they had experienced led them to listen readily to the request for a bell, which belike will be used in the Monument to call people together to hear Fourth of July orations." (S. Wells Williams on July 7, 1854 in his Journal, 238-239); on July 10 there was some discussion "about the size of the stones for the Monument." (id. p. 243) The bell "was brought aboard safely" on July 12. "Wont there be a ringing of Perry's praises when this bell gets to the top of the Monument?" (id. p. 245). "The stones collected in Japan, Loo Choo and China, are built into its (Washington Monument) side; the bell" "was presented in 1858 to the Naval Academy." (id. p. 246); A recent Nav. Inst. Proc., published a photograph of the bell, which "is now rung by the Midshipmen whenever an athletic vistory is scored over their 'friendly enemies' of West Point." "In this nick of time [on July 10, 1854] we told them the Commodore wanted a bell, a big bell, a bell as high as the table, a bell like the one at Ameku-dera, a bell which would

201. Continued.
make all ring again, and, happily, a bell they straight way promised. * * * If it ever gets to the top of the Monument, wont it utter Perry's glory or folly." (Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 243).

202. 24 Marines each from Mississippi and Powhatan with "muskets and 24 rounds of ball cartridges." Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 339-343; "at noon the Band and Marines landed at Junk Harbor jetty and marched in martial array up through the market to the main street and then down to the landing place near Capstan Rock" etc. (Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 244-245).

203. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 495; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 244-245.

204. Navy Arch.; Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 41-43; Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 495-496; Nav. Inst. Proc., June, 1911, 275; III Cooper, Naval Hist., 103; Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 244-248 which sets forth treaty. "On landing to sign this rather singular document, the customary quantity of 'boom-a-laddying' was indulged in, as per the following order:- Twenty-four Marines from the Mississippi; twenty-four Marines from the Powhatan; the Marines with muskets and 24 rounds of ball-cartridges; the seamen to be dressed in white with straw hats; two orderlies with their muskets to be detailed as an escort for the broad pennant." (Spaulding, Japan and Around the World, 41-43).

205. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 497; "In the evening there was an entertainment of singing and dancing with a burlesque of a row in a barber's shop by Ethiopian minstrels which amused them very much, notwithstanding their constant grave faces." (Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 250.)

206. Hawks , U.S. Japan Ex., I, 497.

207. Hawks, U.S. Japan Ex., I, 498; The Powhatan arrived at Ningpo on July 20, 1854 (Williams' Journal Perry Ex., 255-259). For testimonial see Navy Let. Bk., East India , China & Japan Squadron (Perry).

208. Hildreth, Japan As It Was And Is, 535-537.

209. The Log of the Powhatan shows she arrived at Simoda on January 26, 1855 and left there on Washington's Birthday February 22, 1855 when they "spliced the main brace in honor of the Birth Day of Washington". On September 23, 1854 Commander Henry A. Adams received orders for duty under the Department of State and on September 23,

209. Continued.
1855 he reported to Secretary of the Navy James C. Dobbin that "the duty on which I have been employed by the Honorable Secretary of State" "is this day terminated." (Commanders Let. Bk., Navy Arch); On September 28, 1854 Secretary Dobbins enclosed a letter to be delivered to the Commanding Officer, East India Squadron (Letters to Officers, Ships of War, Navy Arch); just prior to the arrival of the Powhatan at Shimoda an earthquake had severely damaged the city and wrecked the Russian frigate Diana (For information on this subject See Abbot to Sec. Navy, 3 April 1855, McCluney to Russian Vice-Admiral, 31 Jan. 1855, Russian Vice-Admiral to McCluney, Feb., 1855, McCluney to Abbot, 12 March 1855, all in East India Squad. Let Bk., Navy Arch; Lt. A.W.Habersham's "My Last Cruise", North Pac. Sur. & Ex. Ex., 198-201, 208; Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 390; The Powhatan sent provisions ashore to the Russians according to the Log in Navy Arch. of Feb. 4, 7, 1855); On Jan. 9, 1855 Captain Joel Abbot on the Macedonian at Whampoa wrote Commander Adams that: "You have been appointed to exchange ratifications of the Treaty with Japan. You will be conveyed to the port of Simoda in the U.S. Steamer Powhatan," and "after exchanging ratifications you will return to Shanghai in the Powhatan." (East India Squad. Let. Bk., Navy Arch); "In conformity with orders I have received from the Hon. Secretary of the Navy you will proceed without delay with the U.S. Steamer * * * as soon as Commander Adams is in readiness, who you are to receive on board, together with an Interpreter, and proceed to the port of Simoda in Japan * * * After the exchange of ratifications has been made" proceed to Shanghai. (Abbot to Commander William J. McCluney commanding the Powhatan, 11 Jan. 1855); Commander Adams and Mr. Lobshoide, Interpreter, went aboard Powhatan at Hong Kong which ship "conveyed them to Simoda, Japan" for "the purpose of ratifying a treaty made by Commodore Perry with the Japanese." The Powhatan arrived at Shimoda on Jan. 26, 1855. "The treaty was ratified on the 21st of February and we left Simoda the next morning the 22nd for Shanghai." (McCluney to Abbot, 10 March 1855, East India Squad. Let Bk, Navy Arch; see also Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 390); the Log of the Powhatan for 18 Feb. reads in part: "Expended by order of Capt. McCluney for entertainment of the Japanese Commissioners on the exchange of Ratifications of the Treaty, 20 lbs Butter, 10 lbs Sugar, 1 bottle mustard."; the Log reads: for "Meridian to 4" on February 21, 1855: "Saluted the Japanese with 17 guns; delivered one Gl Whiskey for entertainment of Japanese Commissioners on occasion of 'Exchange of Ratifications'; Saluted Commissioners with 13 Guns; let go port sheet anchor. William
lbs flour, 25

209. Continued.
Whiting;" From 4 to 6 p.m. "On the departure of the Japanese Commissioners from the ship they were saluted with 17 Guns. H. Rolando." Log of Powhatan for 22 February 1855 reads: "Set fore and aft sails passing to the leeward of Bolcano Island; spliced the main brace in honor of the Birth Day of Washington." (Log is in Navy Arch); "I have to inform you that since my last despatch No. 14 dated March 14th, Commander Adams had arrived here [Hong Kong] from Japan, having exchanged the Treaty with Japan on the 21st of February." (Abbot to Sec. Navy, 3 April 1855, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch); Commander Adams "will leave here [Hong Kong] for the United States by the Mail Steamer to sail on " April 15, 1855. (Abbot to Sec. Navy 3 April 1855, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch); Information of Marines on Powhatan is found in Muster Rolls, M. C. Arch; The Treaty with Japan was ratified and Commander Henry A. Adams carried it to China. He boarded the Powhatan and on Feb. 21, 1855 ratifications were exchanged in Japan. (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Dec. 3, 1855).

210. Rodgers to Sec. Navy, August, 1854, Rodgers Survey Ex., Bk, Navy Arch; "In consequence of the illness of Capt. Ringgold and his condemnation by a board of medical officers, the command of the Surveying Expedition which had been entrusted to him, has devolved on myself." (Lt. John Rodgers, on Vincennes at Hong Kong, August, 1854, Rodgers Surveying Expedition, Navy Arch.)

211. "The last and equally important part of the duties * * * the Straits of Perouse between the Island of Jesso and Sachalin, also the Gulf of Tartary and the approach to the river Amour, as well the character of the stream, with a view to * * * The propriety of examining the Sea of Japan, and Yellow Sea, together with the straits or passages to and from these great basins, will strike you and receive due attention." (Sec. of Navy John P. Kennedy to Commander Cadwalader Ringgold, 28 Feb. 1853, Confidential Let Bk, Navy Arch); "The remaining portions of each year [October to June] will be devoted to the prosecution of survey and exploration in the lower latitudes, along the coast of Japan" etc. (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Dec. 4, 1852); the expedition, composed of the sloop-of-war Vincennes, screw-steamer John Hancock, brig-of-war Porpoise, schooner J. Fenimore Cooper, and the storeship John P. Kennedy ("Old John") sailed from Norfolk on June 31, 1853. It was known as the U.S. Surveying and Exploring Expedition to the North Pacific, China Seas, etc. (Lieut. A.W.Habersham, North Pacific etc Ex., 13); see also Nat. Intell. Dec. 13, 1853.

212. Rodgers to Sec. Navy, 15 Feb. 1855, Rodgers Survey Ex. Bk. Navy Arch.

213. Muster Rolls, M. C. Arch.

214. Rodgers on Vincennes at Hong Kong to Sec. Navy, 15 Feb. 1855, Rodgers Survey, Ex. Bk, Navy Arch; "I have run over from the Island of Loo-Choo," etc. "The Government of Loo-Choo appears inveterately opposed to foreign intercourse and seeks to delay on every occasion by frivolous pretenses the assistance to ships which by Convention with Commodore Perry it is bound to render". "The seclusion of ages is deeply marked in their foreign policy. They will give nothing and take nothing which can be avoided." (Rodgers to Sec. Navy, 17 Dec. 1854, Rodgers Survey. Ex. Bk, Navy Arch See also Lieut. A. W. Habersham's North Pacific Sur. & Ex. Ex., 196); Naval Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 414-415 gives a brief description of the landing at Loo Choo; for incident of the American clipper ship What Cheer sailing from Loo Choo without paying for provisions see Rodgers to Sec. Navy, 17 Dec. 1854 and 18 March 1855, and Rodgers to Actg. Lieut. William King Bridge, Commanding U.S. brig Porpoise, 9 Sept. 1854, Rodgers Survey. Ex. Bk, Navy Arch.

215. Rodgers to Sec. Navy, 15 Feb. 1855; Rodgers Survey. Ex. Bk, Navy Arch; "we have at last arrived at one of the Japanese ports," wrote Rodgers, on Vincennes at Kago Sima Bay, to the "Secretary of State for Foreign affairs Kingdom of Japan," 4 Jan. 1855, Rodgers Survey. Ex. Bk, Navy Arch; On October 30, 1856 the Japanese asked Townsend Harris where Lieutenant Rodgers was - "I told them that Lieutenant Rodgers had returned to the United States." (Griffis, Townsend Harris, 80-82).

216. Rodgers on Vincennes at Hakodadi to Sec. Navy, 11 June, 1855, Rodgers Survey, Ex. Bk, Navy Arch; Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 415; See also Rodgers at Shimoda to Lieut. J. A. Roe, 17 May 1855, Rodgers to Sec. Navy, 20 May 1855, Rodgers to group of Americans, 19 June 1855 and other letters in Rodgers Survey. Ex. Bk, Navy Arch; Rodgers at Shimoda, to Governor of Shimoda, 20 May 1855, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch; Lieut. A. W. Habersham in his "My Last Cruise" in North Pacific Sur. & Ex. Ex., 196-250 describes incidents occuring at Shimoda. For further information about Rodgers' efforts regarding Reed and Dougherty and other stranded Americans see Perry's Narrative, 453-457 and Griffis' Townsend Harris, 133-134; On October 30, 1856 Townsend Harris wrote in his Journal that the Japanese asked where "Lieutenant Rodgers was" and that he informed them that he "had returned to the United States." (Griffis' Townsend Harris,

216. Continued.
81); On June 15, 1855 Rodgers at Hakodadi, wrote to the Governor of Hakodadi. (East India Squad. Let. Bk, Navy Arch; and see letter in Rodgers Survey Ex. Bk, Navy Arch; See also Habersham's "My Last Cruise," 265-294).

217. Rodgers on Vincennes at Hong Kong to Sec. Navy, 15 Feb. 1855, Rodgers Survey Ex. Bk, Navy Arch.

218. Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 64-66; Gowen, Japan, 299.

219. "I have this day hoisted my pendant on board" the San Jacinto at New York. (Captaim James Armstrong to Sec. Navy J. C. Dobbin, 18 Oct. 1855, East India Squad Let. Bk, Navy Arch; "So soon as Lieut. Henry B. Tyler, appointed to relieve Captain A. N. Brevoort in command of the Marine Guard of this ship shall report for duty on board I will proceed to sea with the San Jacinto." (Armstrong to Sec. Navy, 20 Oct. 1855, East India Squad Let. Bk, Navy Arch); Wood, Fankwei, 11, 13, 14.

220. In Mr. Harris' journal we read: - "It was arranged between the State and Navy departments that the steam frigate San Jacinto would call at Penang, to which place I wished to proceed overland, and then take me to Siam and afterwards to Japan. I soon made the acquaintance of Commodore Armstrong, whose flag is in the San Jacinto, and Captain Bell of the frigate. I put on board of her the presents for the kings of Siam, with my heavy baggage for Japan, with some few stores. I found the commodore and Captain Bell very kind, and I hope we shall prove to be good messmates." Mr. Heusken embarked on board the United States Steamship San Jacinto, later meeting Mr. Harris at Penang. His active duties as secretary began in Siam. (Townsend Harris by Griffis, 21).

221. Muster Rolls; I received your letter of Oct. 19, 1855 "informing me that Lieut. Henry B. Tyler has been ordered to this ship in temporary command of the Marine Guard." (Armstrong to Sec. Navy, 20 Oct. 1855, East India Squad. Let Bk, Navy Arch); The Guard from Oct. 1855 to March, 1856 was composed of Orderly Sergeant James Henrick, one Sergeant, two Corporals, one fifer, one drummer and twenty-six privates. In April, 1856, there were only twenty-five privates as Private Martin Wattle died of consumption at Pulo, Penang, on March 27, 1856. (Muster Rolls)

222. Wood, Fankwei, 16.

223. Wood, Fankwei, 15, though Surgeon William Maxwell Wood evidently meant the Articles for the Gov. of the Navy.

224. Wood, Fankwei, 27.

225. Wood, Fankwei, 69; sailed from St. Simon's Bay on January 28, 1856, Id, 95 and see also East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.

226. Wood, Fankwei, 96.

227. Wood, Fankwei, 104-120.

228. Wood, Fankwei, 120-121; Difference here, Harris says San Jacinto arrived April 1 and Wood, March 22.

229. "A letter from Mr. Harris our Consul General to Japan, dated at Penang, says he was informed he might expect her [San Jacinto] arrival at this place [Singapore] about the 20th of February." (Captain Pope on Macedonian at Singapore to Sec. Navy, 21 March 1856, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch); Armstrong reported the arrival of the San Jacinto at "Pulo Penang" on March 22, 1856. "Consul General Harris is here and he will embark on board the San Jacinto" as soon as we are ready to proceed. Pope is waiting at Singapore on Frigate Macedonian for us. (Commodore James Armstrong to Sec. Navy, 24 March 1856, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch)

230. Griffis' Townsend Harris, 24.

231. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 24-26; for descriptions of the pageants, presents and outward phases of Mr. Harris' triumph in Siam, see Dr. W. M. Wood's "Fankwei." The San Jacinto in the seas of India, China, and Japan sailed on February 21st for Ceylon, (Id, 104); arrived Point de Galle, Colombo, Ceylon, March 5, 1856, (Id, 105).

232. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 26; "Mr. Harris, our Consul General to Japan, having rejoined this ship San Jacinto on the 12th" of August 1856 "I left Hong Kong on the evening of that day" for Shimoda and "arrived here on the 21st" of August 1856. "After a detention of 2 weeks awaiting the fitting up of a residence on shore for Mr. Harris & his recognition by the Japanese authorities, and he, having this day [3 Sept. 1856] having left this ship & taken possession of his consulate, I shall, after having completed his Flag Staff, leave this tomorrow for Shanghae." (Armstrong at Shimoda to Dobbin, 3 Sept. 1856, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch).

233. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 33; Wood, Fankwei, 389-399.

234. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 40-41; "At an entertainment given to us by invitation of the two Governors or Royal Commissioners from Jeddo (sic) they" asked me a few questions. "The first was 'If I could not take the Consul away with me?' My answer was - 'NO, that my instructions were to take him to Simoda, to see him established in his Consular Home, to erect his Flag Staff and to leave him there.'" Armstrong gave a "return entertainment on board the San Jacinto to the Governors and Suites", about 100 persons. Salute of 13 guns were fired and "exercising of the crew at the Great Guns, Small arms" etc. were held in honor of the visitors. (Armstrong to Sec. Navy, 3 Sept. 1856, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch).

235. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 45.

236. Journal of Townsend Harris, Griffis', Townsend Harris, 55.

237. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 55-56.

238. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 58; "September 4, 1856. Slept very little, from excitment and mosquitoes; the latter are enormous in size. Men on shore to put up my flag-staff. Heavy lot. Slow work. Spar falls, breaks cross-trees; fortunately no one hurt. At last get a reinforcement from the ship; flag-staff erected. Men form a ring round it, and at half past two P.M. of this day I hoist the "First Consular Flag" ever seen in this empire. Grave reflections. Ominous of change. Undoubted beginning of the end. Query, - if for the real good of Japan? The San Jacinto left at five o'clock, saluting me by dipping her flag, which was answered by me." (Griffis', Townsend Harris, 58).

239. Townsend Harris to Commodore James Armstrong, 1 Sept. 1856, East India Squad. Let Bk, Navy Arch.

240. P.S. on Armstrong to Sec. Navy, 3 Sept. 1856, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.

241. Armstrong to Sec. Navy, 6 Oct. 1856, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.

242. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 120.

243. Harris' Journal published in Griffis', Townsend Harris, 149.

244. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 149; In 1894 the Rev. W. F. Dicrst of Tokyo cleaned and reset the grave stones and renovated the Cemetery. (id)

245. See Chapter VIII, Volume II, this History.

246. "I learn from Capt. Foote that he took Mr. C. W. Bradley with the Siamese Treaty to Bangkok, and that the ratifications were exchanged." (Journal of Townsend Harris under date of Sept. 9, 1857, in Griffis' "Townsend Harris," p. 171).

247. Griffis, quoting Harris in his Townsend Harris, 163.

248. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 167; The Portsmouth sailed from Shanghai on August 22, 1857 for Simoda (sic) and Hakodadi (sic), Japan. (Armstrong to Sec. Navy, 1 Sept. 1857, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch); The Portsmouth anchored "near Vandalia Bluff in the outer harbor of Simoda" on Sept. 7, 1857. "Several officers of rank came on board with the Governor's respects and welcome to Japan." "A few days after our arrival, I called on the two Governors of Simoda, accompanied by four of the Ward Room Officers." Later also Hakodadi. Called on Governor with three Lieutenants of the ship. The Japs were cordial at both Shimoda and Hakodadi. (Foote to Armstrong, 9 Oct. 1857, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch); Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXVII, 396-397.

249. Muster Rolls, M. C. Arch. The Guard consisted of Orderly Sergeant Benjamin Woodfield, one sergeant, two corporals, two musics and eighteen privates.

250. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 168.

251. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 170; Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXVII, 396-397.

252. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 172; Nav. Inst. Proc. XXXVII, 396-397.

253. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 182.

254. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 198.

255. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 214-229.

256. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 256-263.

257. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 256-263 which also contains an excellent description of the "Ro-nins"; "a Ronin was a two-sworded man belonging to no clan, or a man who

257. Continued.
had renounced his clan for some particular purpose." (Adams, Hist. Japan, I, 105).

258. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 319-321.

259. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 319; July 4, 1858 was Sunday so the 4th of July was celebrated on July 5. Mr. Reed visited the Powhatan. Later (after Reed left) the ship sailed for Japan and arrived at Nagasaki 4 days later. (Johnston, China and Japan, 96, 97); The Powhatan entered Simoda Harbor and anchored near the Mississippi on July 25, 1858. (Johnston, China and Japan, 127); On July 27, 1858 the Powhatan got underway leaving the Mississippi and Russian frigate Askold at Simoda. Cleared "Treaty Point" and anchored at Kanagawa. (Johnston, China and Japan, 133); "Meanwhile Flag-Officer Josiah Tatnall, under order of the United States Navy Department, was on his way to Japan, to bring letters and dispatches to the American Consul-General, was ignorant of Mr. Harris' visit to Yedo, or his new projects for treaty-making. On the Powhatan he left Shanghai July 5th, joining the Mississippi at Nagasaki five days later Here the death of Commodore Perry was announced the Japanese receiving the news with expressions of sincere regret. The Treaty at Tientsin had been signed June 26, but Tatnall, innocent of the notions of later manufacture, so diligently ascribed to him of rushing 'off to Japan to take advantage of the consternation certain to be created by the first news of recent events in the Peiho,' * * *, was so far oblivious of any further intentions on the part of Mr. Harris of making another treaty with Japan, that he lingered in the lovely harbor until the 21st of July. In the Powhatan he cast anchor in Shimoda Harbour, on the 25th, the Mississippi having arrived two days before. On the 27th, taking Mr. Harris on board the Powhatan, Tatnall steamed up to Kanagawa, visiting also Yokohama, where Perry's old treaty-house was still standing. Meeting Ii on the 29th, negotiations were re-opened. In Commodore Tatnall's presence, the main treaty was dated July 29th (instead of September 1st) and to this the premier Ii affixed his signature, and pen-seal. By this treaty Yokohama was to be opened to foreign trade and residence July 1st of the following year, 1859, and an embassy was to be sent to visit the United States. The Commodore and Consul-general returned to Shimoda August 1st. Mr. Harris then took a voyage of recreation to China." (Griffis', M.C. Perry, 415-416); The steam frigate Powhatan was "commissioned at the Navy Yard, Gosport, Va." on Nov. 23, 1857. (Lt. James D. Johnston, China and Japan, 13); "The agreeable duty of conveying

259. Continued.
ex-President Pierce and his estimable lady to the island of Madeira " was the duty of the Powhatan. They arrived aboard on Dec. 7, 1857 at Norfolk, "a full guard of Marines presented arms, and the band struck up the national air as he came over the side." A 21 gun salute was fired from the Pennsylvania as they sailed. (Johnston, China and Japan, 14); Delayed sailing until Dec. 11, 1857. Arrived at Madeira in less than 17 days. Pierce left next day. Gen. Pierce addressed the officers and crew and Capt. Geo. F. Pearson responded. (id. p. 17); "In the summer of 1858 Tattnall visited Nagasaki in the Powhatan, meeting there the Mississippi - the first American naval vessels to call at that port since the visit of the Preble in 1849." (Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 402).

260. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 319-320; the Powhatan "left the Peiho on July 5, 1858 and arrived at Nagasaki on the 10th, where the Mississippi was lying." (Navy Let. Bk, East India Squadron, 49-52); In the summer of 1858 Tattnall in the Powhatan sailed from Nagasaki "for Shimoda, where he arrived in season to be of assistance to Consul-General Harris, who had recently made a treaty with Japan that was still unsigned. Fearing that one of the European nations might complete a treaty before the Americans completed theirs, he readily consented to convey Harris to Kanagawa and assist him in obtaining the desired signatures. On July 29 the new treaty between America and Japan was signed in the cabin of the Powhatan." (Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 402); On July 28, 1858 the Japanese Commissioners were received on the Powhatan. "The Marine Guard, with all the officers of the ship in full uniform," etc. 19 gun salute. (Johnston, China and Japan, 134); On Powhatan, July 28, 1858 a "handsome collation" in Commodore Tattnall's cabin. As the Japanese left the Powhatan "all the officers, the guard of Marines, and the Band were present," etc. 21 gun salute. (Johnston, China and Japan, 136).

261. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 320-321.

262. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 319-321; Tattnall to Sec. Navy, 1 Sept. 1859, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch., 49-52; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 64-66; Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, 25-27; Reuter, Anglo-Amer. Rel. Span-Amer. War, 23; Harris signed treaty on July 29, 1858 (II Maclay, Hist. Navy 132);Gowen, Japan, 300;. Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, 25-27; "The Commercial Treaty with the U.S. afterwards negotiated by Mr. Townsend Harris, to whose love of fair play the Japanese are much indebted, was signed 29th July 1858, and fol-

262. Continued.
lowed, on 20th August of the same year by a Commercial Treaty between Japan and Great Britain." (Japan, Our Ally, [British], Crowdson, 10); Townsend Harris on November 28, 1857 wrote: "I sometime doubt whether the opening of Japan to foreign influences will promote the general happiness of this people." (Japan, Our Ally, [British], Crowdson, 12; see also Griffis', Townsend Harris, 198); Treaty with Japan, June 17, 1857, proclaimed June 30, 1858. (Malloy, Treaties etc. I, 998-1000) Treaty of July 29, 1858. (id, 1000-1010); "When the treaty was first signed, Townsend Harris was averse to depriving Japan of the power of enforcing its own laws upon foreigners; but, as our laws were at the time crude in the extreme, he proposed extra-territorial rights for his countrymen. This example was naturally followed by all European Powers." (Nitobe, Japanese Nation, 285-286); Harris was also very fair on tariff schedule. (id, 286). Treat, Japan and The United States, 41

263. M. C. Muster Rolls.

264. Tattnall to Sec. Navy Isaac Toucey, 1 Sept. 1858, East India Squad Let Bk, 49-52, Navy Arch; The Powhatan left Simoda on Aug. 5, 1858 and arrived at Nagasaki and was joined by the Minnesota. (Johnston, China and Japan, 142); The Powhatan left Shanghai on Sept. 6, 1858 and Woosung on the 8th for its 3d visit to Nagasaki, Japan which was reached on September 10, 1858. The Minnesota arrived there with Mr. Reed on board on Sept. 20, 1858. (Johnston, China and Japan, 153); The Powhatan sailed from Nagasaki for Shanghai on Oct. 31, 1858. (Johnston, China and Japan, 164).

265. Williams, Life of S. Wells Williams, 282-286; Johnston, China and Japan, 159-160; The Steam frigate Mississippi "was for more than a month the home of Mr. Reed, the Minister to China, who was carried to Jeddo (Japan) by this vessel, and the officers were allowed to go freely about that city." (Nat. Intell., Feb. 1, 1860).

266. For information regarding the Marine Guards of the Minnesota and Mississippi see Muster Rolls, M. C. Arch.

267. Tattnall on Powhatan at Nagasaki, 27 October 1858, in Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong., 1st Sess.

268. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 319-321.

269. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 322.

270. Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong., 1st Sess.

271. Muster Rolls, M. C. Arch.

272. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 322-325; "On the 30th of June 1859, the Consulate of the United States was removed from Shimoda to Kanagawa, where the American Flag was raised at the Consulate July 1st. The Legation of the United States was established in Yedo (Tokyo) July 7, 1859. Amid dense crowds of people, and a party of twenty-three Americans, Mr. Harris was escorted to his quarters in a temple." (Griffis' Matthew Calbraith Perry, 415-416 citing "A Cruise in the U.S.S. Frigate Mississippi," by W. F. Gragg).

273. An. Rep. Sec. Navy Isaac Toucey, 1 Dec. 1860; During a week's stay in San Francisco the hospitalities as well as the curiosity of the American people, were bestowed upon them. The members of the Embassy, on their part, evinced their gratification by purchasing carloads of cloths, blankets, carpets, &c. These were taken home by the Kan-rin-maru, a small Japanese steamer, which had been dispatched to San Francisco some time before, for the express purpose of ascertaining the safe arrival of the Embassy. As this was the first steamer to cross the Pacific manned and managed by the Japanese (under the control of Awa Katsu, a present Privy Councillor), the event is not without importance. (From Nitobe, Inter Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159,160,162); The visit of the Japanese embassy to the United States was preceded by the Japanese war steamer Kandinamarrah, sent by the government of Japan to signalize their approach. She arrived at San Francisco on the 17th of March, and proceeded soon afterwards to the navy yard at Mare Island for repairs. Captain Cunningham, anticipating the wishes of the Department, promptly gave her every facility the yard afforded. The admiral, captain, officers and crew were appropriately and comfortably quartered in the public buildings until the Kandinamarrah was repaired and ready again for their reception. The Admiral expressed himself highly gratified, and tendered payment of the expenses, which Captain Cunningham, however, declined to receive. The Kandinamarrah left the navy yard for San Francisco on the 1st of May, and soon afterwards departed for Japan. (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1860); "The Japanese steam corvette Candinamarruh has been in the dry-dock at Mare Island Navy Yard and been put in complete order free of charge, Commodore Cunningham explaining that while he had no actual authority to render this accommodation, he felt sure he was but carrying out the intentions of his Government in doing for the Japanese steamer all that he could do for an American man-of-war." (Nat. Intell., April 17, 1860); there are no muster rolls in M. C. Arch. for the J. Fenimore Cooper;

273. Continued.
Johnston, China and Japan, 310; The Candinar sailed from Uraga on Feb. 9, 1860. (Johnston, China and Japan, 327); "The first of these missions visited the United States in 1860, in the last year of President Buchanan, and has been but lightly touched upon in the histories. The envoys and their suite came in the U.S.S. Powhatan, and at the same time came the Japanese steamship Kanrin Maru, under Captain Katsu, the organizer of the modern Japanese Navy." (Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 302-303); "The Japanese steam corvette Kandinmarro, which left her anchorage off our city on Saturday morning at nine o'clock, arrived at Mare Island before twelve * * * The Kandinmarro was boarded, in anchoring by Captain Mc Dougal, Captain-of-the-Yard * * * one of the three-story brick buildings, surrounded by a garden, having been prepared, by order of the Commodore [Cunningham], for the reception of the Japanese Admiral and officers, they took up their quarters there * * *. Yesterday, the Admiral and Officers went to Vallejo, where, by invitation of Capt. Frisbee, son-in-law of Gen. Vallejo, they took a long ride through a fine agricultural district." (San Francisco paper quoted in Nat. Intell., May 14, 1860).

274. Griffis', Townsend Harris, 322-323; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 76-80; "Dan Ketch (Japanese name said to be Dans Kevitch), or, more properly, Dan Kichi, was for some time a companion of Sam. After staying some years in China and America, he returned home, served as an interpreter in the British Legation, and in 1860, as we have seen in the course of our narration, he fell a victim to a ronin's sword." (Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 157-159); half a dozen Japanese with drawn swords attacked Heuskan, who was armed with only a hunting whip. He was carried to American Legation. (Black, Young Japan, I, 56-57); Others were killed. In January, 1860 "Dankitchi who having been years before shipwrecked on a foreign shore, America, had returned to his country the moment he could do so under the protection of a treaty power, on the opening of the ports. He was employed as an interpreter at the English Legation by Mr. Alcock," who by so doing hoped to protect him. Stabbed to death with a short sword as he stood near the flagstaff of the British Legation at Yedo in broad daylight. (Black, Young Japan, I, 46); Dankutei, Japanese linguist to the British Legation, was murdered by Japanese assassins, 29th Jan. 1860. (Adams, Hist. Japan, I, 132); Bayard Taylor, Japan in Our Day, 25-27.

275. Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 402.

276. Stribling on Hartford at Shanghai to Sec. Navy, 28, May 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.

277. Stribling to Sec. Navy, 3 Oct, 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.

278. Muster Rolls, M. C. Arch; there are no muster rolls in M. C. Arch. of the Saginaw.

279. Stribling on Hartford at Hong Kong to Sec. Navy, 15 Nov. 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch; see also Nav. Inst. Proc., XXXVII, 402-403.

280. Stribling on Hartford at Hong Kong to Sec. Navy, 27 Nov. 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.

281. Harris to Stribling, 7 Nov. 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.

282. M. C. Arch.

283. M. C. Arch.

284. See Treaty; Harris to Commodore Josiah Tattnall, 4 Sept. 1858, Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong., 1st Sess. pp. 3-4.

285. Harris to Tattnall, 4 Sept. 1858, Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong., 1st Sess; Captain Algernon S. Taylor of the Marines, was detailed to escort the Embassy; It was the first formal mission sent by Japan to a foreign country. Several Japanese had visited Rome about 1528 but "without any governmental authority." (Nat. Intell., August 6, 1860, 3; see also An Rep. Sec. Navy, 1860, 17; Nat. Intell., Feb. 1, April 20, 1860; II Maclay, Hist. Navy, 133); "Aside from interest and great commercial expectation, there is something fresh and novel in the interchange of civilities about to occur between the Mongols and Caucassians. The Empire of Japan is old, but only once since the days of Marco Paulo has a Japanese ever visited any other than Asiatic shores. That was long ago, in the year 1584, when the Catholic religion had gained so strong a hold in the Asiatic Archipeligo that an embassy was sent to Rome and Spain. It is related that this embassy traversed Rome and Spain, and returned, as we hope their more modern kin will, highly delighted with what they had seen and heard." (Nat. Intell, May 9, 1860); The Committee appointed by the Ethnological Society of New York to hold an interview with the Scientific members of the Japanese Embassy have furnished their official report, from which we make the following extracts: The subject of an

285. Continued.
embassy, alleged to have been sent from Japan to Rome, A. D. 1528, was broached, Matsmoto stated emphatically that no formal mission to a foreign country ever occurred previous to the one of which he is accredited to the United States he observed that some 278 years ago several young men, connections and representatives of three princes, visited Rome, but without any governmental authority. (Nat. Intell., Aug. 6, 1860); this is "the second Embassy which has ever proceeded from Japan to a foreign nation." (Nat. Intell., May 14, 1860).

286. Harris to Tattnall, 2 Feb. 1859, Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong., 1st Sess.; "The departure of the Japanese Embassy has been postponed" wrote Mr. Harris to Commodore Tattnall on March 29, 1859. (Harris to Tattnall, 29 March 1859, East India Squad Let. Bk, Navy Arch.)

287. Harris to Sec. State Lewis Cass, 23 March 1859, Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong., 1st Sess.; "Captain Nicholson took me up to Kanagawa and on the 19th I signed a convention * * *" (Harris to Tattnall, 29 March 1859, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch); On Feb. 14, 1859 the Mississippi sailed from Hong Kong for Japan to embark the Japanese Embassy. (Johnston, China and Japan, 186); "Preparations were now made for our immediate departure [from Hong Kong] for Japan but, just as they were completed, an order was received from the Navy Department to go to Singapore for John E. Ward etc. Tattnall sent the Germantown to Japan to tell the Mississippi of the change of plans. The Powhatan left Hong Kong on March 1, 1859 towing the Germantown. (Johnston, China and Japan, 187-188); Fogs delayed and the Powhatan towed the Germantown out of Hong Kong on March 4, 1859. (id. 188).

288. An. Rep. Sec. Navy, Isaac Toucey, Dec. 2, 1859, p. 1148; Townsend Harris, in June, 1859 visited Shanghai in the Mississippi, visited the Powhatan on June 14, 1859. (Johnston, China and Japan, 227-228); "The excitement on board the Powhatan was so intense, that the tops and masts were lined with eager gazers, and as I had been directed to have 200 men prepared to land at a moment's notice, I ordered the heavy launches to be got ready for hoisting out for that purpose. The work was performed in less time than it ever had been, though it proved to be unnecessary." (Johnston, China and Japan, 240); The Powhatan reached Woosung on August 22, 1859. The Mississippi had returned from Japan where she had been sent to convey Harris from Simoda to Yedo. (Johnston, China and Japan, 277); Mr. Ward boarded the Powhatan on September 17, 1859 and sailed for Nagasaki,

288. Continued.
Japan on the 18th (4th trip). Arrived three days later at Nagasaki. One day there and sailed on Sept. 22 for Yedo, leaving the Germantown at Nagasaki. (Johnston, China and Japan, 279); The Governor of Nagasaki called on Mr. Ward aboard the Powhatan on Sept. 29, 1859. (Johnston, China and Japan, 282); "Kanagawa is immediately opposite Yokohama." (Johnston, China and Japan, 287); The Powhatan with Mr. Ward on board sailed from Nagasaki on Sept. 29, 1859 and arrived on Oct. 3, 1859 at Kanagawa anchoring off Yokuhama. (Johnston, China and Japan, 283); On Oct. 4, 1859 the Powhatan left Yokuhama for Yedo. (Johnston, China and Japan, 290); "Remained at anchor off the Yedo forts from the 5th to the 10th of October." (id. 300); On Oct. 10, 1859 the Powhatan returned from Yedo to Kanagawa Mr. Ward remaining there to be presented to the Prime Minister. He rejoined the ship the next day after riding 16 miles on horseback from Yedo. (Johnston, China and Japan, 300); The Powhatan sailed from Kanagawa on October 12, 1859 and anchored off Woosung on October 17. (Johnston, China and Japan, 300); The Powhatan sailed from Woosung on October 25, 1859 and arrived in Yokuhama Bay on October 31, 1859. The Governor of Kanagawa visited the Powhatan on November 9, 1859. She left Kanagawa for Yedo returning to Kanagawa on the 11th. Sailed for Hong Kong on the 12th and arrived at Hong Kong on the 20th. (Johnston, China and Japan, 303).

289. Cass to Harris, 30 April 1859, Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong, 1st Sess.

290. Senate Ex. Doc. No. 25, 36th Cong. 1st Sess; a letter dated Oct. 31, 1859 by Harris to C. H. Smith, barque Onward pub. in Nat. Intell., Jan. 11, 1860 states that "the Japanese Embassy will embark for the United States on the 22d of February next. It will consist of two Chief Ambassadors, eighteen officials of various ranks, fifty attendents and servants, in all seventy persons. * * *"; "On the evening of the 10th, as we lay in the port of Yokohama, preparing to sail in the morning, and about fifteen miles distant from Jeddo, a fire broke out in that direction, which seemed to cover a large space, and to be nearer than Jeddo, and, as we concluded, was consuming some town or village, which are numberless around Jeddo. The scene was magnificent, however melancholy, and resembled, as I imagined, the flames sent up from the top of the great mountain Fusi Ami, (Clearly in sight, and 16,000 feet high,) in the days of its activity as a volcano. Leaving in the morning we had not time to receive any information, but have since learnt it was the Imperial Palace itself,

290. Continued.
in Jeddo, which was destroyed." (Nat. Intell., Feb. 22, 1860 quoting letter dated December 12, 1859 of a correspondent of the New York Journal of Commerce); See Black, Young Japan, I, 45 for fire in Foreign Quarters on January 5, 1860; See also Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; Griffis', Townsend Harris, 322-323; On November 20, 1859 the Powhatan anchored near the Hartford at Hong Kong. Tattnall transferred the squadron to Stribling. The sloop-of-war Germantown arrived at Hong Kong with Ward aboard on the 21st. (Germantown sailed for home on Dec. 17, 1859). On December 31, 1859 the Powhatan sailed from Hong Kong and reached Yokuhama on January 11, 1860. (Johnston, China and Japan, 309); The Hartford arrived at Hong Kong on Nov. 9, 1859. The Powhatan had gone "from Shanghai to Japan". "There appears to be no doubt here about the * * * between the Chinese and the allies [France and Great Britain] being renewed. Authentic information has been received of the determination of the allies to send a large force to punish the Chinese for the affair at the Pei-ho" etc. (Stribling on the Hartford at Hong Kong, to Sec. Navy, 12 Nov. 1859, East India Squad. Let. Bk., Navy Arch.)

291. Tattnall to Harris, 11 Nov. 1859, Senate Ex. Doc. No.25, 36th Cong., 1st Sess.

292. Tattnall to Sec. Navy, 26 Nov. 1859, East India Squad. Let Bk, Navy Arch.

293. Poore, Perley's Rem., 31; Nat. Intell., May 24, 1860.

294. East India Squad Let Bk, 203, Navy Arch; Tattnall decided to go to Japan. (Tattnall to Sec. Navy, 30 Aug. 1859, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch).

295. Nat. Intell., April 28, 1860.

296. Johnston's "China and Japan," p. 271, quoted by Jones in his "Tattnall," 117-118.

297. Nat. Intell., April 28, 1860; Johnston, China and Japan, 313.

298. M. C. Arch.

299. Senate Ex Doc No 25, 36th Cong, 1st Sess, p. 12; Johnston, China and Japan, 325; see also Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; who states that there was a Chief ambassador and a Vice Ambassador, three interpreters, among whom was the far-famed "Tommie", three physicians, and fifty-two attendants including barbers,

299. Continued.
pike-bearers, etc. making a total of 71 persons; Manjiro Nakahana drifted away from Japan in 1841 and marooned for six months on rocky islet from which he was taken off by John Howland and christened John Mung. Visited United States with Mission in 1860 (Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 291); Griffis' Townsend Harris, 322-323; Nat. Intell., Jan. 11, 1860 pub. letter of Townsend Harris of October 21, 1859; Nat. Intell., April 20, 1860 gives names of all officials; "Tommy" present (Johnston, China and Japan, 353).

300. Jones, Life of Commodore Tattnall, 120-123.

301. An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1860, 17; Tattnall to Sec. Navy, 31 March 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch; Nat. Intell., April 17, 20, 23, 1860; See also East India Squad Let Bk, 206-207, Navy Arch; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; "The British Consul General has made an official communication to the Secretary of Foreign Affairs of Japan, reflecting on certain officers of the Powhatan in obtaining Itzabus from the Custom House. On my arrival here, I directed that no claim on the part of this Ship, or officially by any officer should be made on the Custom House, and that each officer should stand upon the same platform as any other American citizen on shore. I desire that you will inform me whether any demand has been made on the Custom House. Officially, or in contravention of this understanding. The Powhatan with the Japanese Commissioners on board is detained for your reply, therefore I request you to make it as soon as possible." (Tattnall to Governor of Kanagawa, Feb. 10, 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, Navy Arch.); Johnston, China and Japan, 327-334; "The Japanese Ministers to New York were to have sailed before this time in the Powhatan" ("Overland China Mail," Hong Kong, March 15, 1860 quoted in Nat. Intell., May 14, 1860).

302. Nat. Intell., April 28, 1860.

303. Jones, Life of Commodore Tattnall, 120-123.

304. Nat. Intell., May 7, 1860; On the day previous to his departure, Commodore Tattnall was presented with a letter signed by the British residents who owing to shortness of visit were prevented from tendering him a public demonstration. The letter concluded with this paragraph: "In conclusion, we pray that your life may be long spared to the credit and honor of your country, and that you may reap that reward so justly due to one who has so signally and gallantly proved that 'blood is

304. Continued.
thicker than water.'" (Jones, "Tattnall", 120-121); This letter is probably the origin of Tattnall's famous expression alleged to have been exclaimed by him in 1859 when, aboard the Toey-wan in the Pei-ho, he went to the assistance of the British. Lieutenant Johnston, in his "China and Japan" p. 87, wrote that Tattnall replied, "Blood is thicker than water," to one who warned him that he was being unneutral. Lieut. Johnston must have seen this letter at Honolulu and when he later wrote his book (pub. at Philadelphia, 1860) put the words in Tattnall's mouth; "touched at Honolulu" (An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1860) Lt. James D. Johnston was Exec. Off. of Powhatan; At Honolulu. "Capt. Taylor, of the Marine Guard of the Powhatan, had been charged by the Flag Officer with the duty of providing for the comfort and accommodations of the Embassy, and he was sent on shore immediately to procure suitable quarters for it during the stay of the ship in the harbor. He succeeded in hiring an entire hotel for this purpose, and returned to the ship in the course of 2 or 3 hours, the Embassy was landed and conveyed to their new home, receiving a parting salute of 15 guns as they left the ship. * * * Kamehamcha IV, King of the Sandwich or Hawaiian Islands," hastened to offer the Embassy a palace of Mr. Wyllie but the Embassy declined and remained at the hotel. But they used this palace the "Dudoit House" for levees and receptions. Stayed at the hotel three days and returned to the Powhatan. (Johnston, China and Japan, 349-350); On March 9, 1860 Commissioner Borden, Commodore Tattnall, the Embassadors, and several officers of the Powhatan were presented to Kamehamcha IV. (Johnston, China and Japan, 350-351); On March 14, 1860 Mr. Borden gave a splendid Ball at the Dudoit House. (Johnston, China and Japan, 356); The Japanese were unable to fathom the mysteries of the ladies dresses. (Johnston, China and Japan, 354); King Kamehamcha IV called on Commodore Tattnall and the Japanese Embassy on the Powhatan on March 17, 1860. The yards were manned, a 21 gun salute fired and Marines presented arms. (Johnston, China and Japan, 357); The Powhatan sailed from Honolulu on March 18, 1860 and arrived at San Francisco on March 29, 1860. (Johnston, China and Japan, 357).

305. Nat. Intell., April 20, 1860; The Powhatan went to the Navy Yard, Mare Island. Active and Shubrick took the Japanese Embassy to San Francisco. Cunningham was wounded by the salute. The freedom of the City was extended to the Japanese. (Johnston, China and Japan, 358-359); The presents of San Francisco were put on board the Candimar. (Johnston, China and Japan, 360);

305. Continued.
Landing at San Francisco on March 9, the envoys were warmly received, the Board of Supervisors of the city taking occasion to express "the earnest wish that the amicable relations happily existing between the Imperial Government of Japan and the United States of America and their people, may be perpetuated and productive of great and mutual advantages." (Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 302-303).

306. Tattnall to Sec. Navy Isaac Toucey, 31 March 1860, East India Squad. Let Bk, 206-207 and see also 137; Hitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1860, 17; Nat. Intell., April 17, 20, 1860.

307. Nat. Intell., April 20, 1860 quoting San Francisco Times, April 2, 1860.

308. Tattnall to Toucey, 31 March 1860, East India Squad Let Bk, 206-207, Navy Arch; Tattnall arrived at New York on S.S. Northern Light in advance of Embassy. (Nat. Intell. April 30, 1860); "I proceeded in the mail steamer of the 5th April [1860], accompanied by Commodore Tattnall and Captain Taylor - the former desiring to precede the Embassy in their arrival at Washington as a matter of expediency to the Government, and the latter having been detailed by him to escort the Embassadors across the Isthmus of Panama and to the U.S." (Johnston, China and Japan, 361).

309. Nat. Intell., April 17, 1860.

310. Nat. Intell., April 23, 1860; The Powhatan sailed from Mare Island on April 5, 1860 the Independence firing a salute. Reached San Francisco on the same day. Sailed from San Francisco on April 7, 1860. (Johnston, China and Japan, 361); The Powhatan steamed out of San Francisco Bay on April 7, 1860 as the fort on Alcatraz Island fired 17 guns. (Johnston, China and Japan, 361).

310½ The Powhatan arrived at Panama April 23, 1860 and received salute fired by the U.S.S. Lancaster and welcome by Flag Officer Montgomery. "Captain Gardner of the steam frigate Roanoke and Captain Taylor of the Marine Corps, went over from Aspinwall" to conduct them across. (Johnston, China and Japan, 363-364); The Embassy left the Powhatan, Lancaster and Saranac at Panama. On reaching Aspinwall the boats of the Roanoke and frigate Sabine conveyed them to the Roanoke. "Commodore Mc Cluney's barge took the lead, convoying the six principal officials, Captain Gardner, of the Roanoke, and Captain Taylor." Received with honors on Roanoke. the Powhatan under a 21 gun salute of

310½. Continued.
"Marines presented arms." Sailed on April 26, 1860. (Johnston, China and Japan, 364-365).

311. An.Rep. Sec. Navy 1860, 17; The Roanoke stopped at Porto Bello for water and sailed for New York on the 27th. Arrived at Sandy Hook on May 9, 1860. Orders received to go to Hampton Roads and arrived there on May 13, 1860. (Johnston, China and Japan, 365-366).

312. Muster Rolls, M.C. Arch.

313. Nat. Intell., April 30, 1860; Jones, Life of Commodore Tattnall, 120-123; "I have arrived here on duty in advance of the Japanese Embassy. I deem it important to communicate personally with the Department in relation to their reception. I await here for orders. The Embassy will arrive about the 12th of May." (Telegram of Tattnall at N.Y. to Sec. Navy, 28 April 1860, Capt. Let. Bk, II, Navy Arch); "I left the Powhatan at San Francisco and proceeded to Panama by Mail Steamer. * * *" (Tattnall at "Astor House," N.Y., to Sec. Navy, 28 April 1860, Capt. Let. Bk, II, Navy Arch); "I beg leave to ask, if you approve my course in coming here in advance of the Japanese Embassy, that you will approve my actual expenses from San Francisco to New York" etc. (Tattnall to Sec. Navy, 7 May 1860, Capt. Let. Bk, II, Navy Arch); On May 7, 1860 Tattnall again explains to Sec. Navy why he came in advance of the Japanese Embassy. (Capt. Let. Bk., II, Navy Arch). See also Note 308.

313½. Johnston, China and Japan, 366-368.

314. Nat. Intell., May 16, 1860, publishing a description from the Baltimore American.

315. M. C. Arch.

316. An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1860, 17; Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; Denison, Illus. Hist. of the World, 668. They were received at the Navy Yard by the Navy, Marines and Militia and escorted to Willard's Hotel. (Poore, Perley's Rem., 31-34; "The arrival of the browned Asiatics was made a gala occasion in the Capitol. Half the town repaired to the Barracks to witness the debarkation of the strange and gorgeously apparelled voyagers from the gaily decorated vessel." (Mrs Clay's "A Belle of the Fifties", III). See also Nat. Intell., April 17, 20, 23, May 24, 1860); For "The First Japanese Mission to America" see Herbert H. Gowen in Washington Historical Quarterly, Jan., 1925, XVI, 8-16; From San Francisco the envoys went to Panama and thence to Wash-

316. Continued.
ington where they were entertained at the Willard Hotel and, on May 17, received by the President and Secretary Cass. The diary of Murakami, one of the envoys, is full of amused and interested appreciation of all the new things to which they were introduced, from "the group dance of both sexes" (ball) at Washington to the presentation of a handsome watch to each by the Walton Company of New York. The mission to Great Britain and other European countries was dispatched more than a year later, leaving Yokohama in H.B.M.S. Odin on January 23, 1862. (Gowen, Outline Hist. Japan, 302-303); "Some time before eleven o'clock yesterday morning the fine new steamer Philadelphia was descried dashing up the river * * *. At a quarter to twelve o'clock she arrived at the Navy Yard wharf with her charge, the Ambassadors of a Power * * * as the hour of 12, noon, had been appointed for the ceremonial of debarkation and landing, the Embassy remain d on board the Philadelphia * * * Captain Dupont. Mayor Berret * * * Numerous members of both Houses of Congress were interspersed through the assemblage in the Navy Yard. * * * A double line had been formed, commencing at the gangway of the boat * * * lower part of which consisted of the corporate authorities, naval officers, and citizens, but further on of the United States Marines and the Volunteer Military * * * Commodore Buchanan * * * welcomed the Embassy * * * cortege took up their march towards the city* * * The military consisted of * * * a detachment of the Marine Band * * *" (Nat. Intell., May 15, 1860).

317. Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; Denison, Illus. Hist. of World, 668; Poore, Perley's Rem. 31-34; see Quar. Columbia (Washington D.C.) Hist. Soc., Jan., 1925; Nat. Intell., May 9, 14, 1860; II Singleton, 59; The Japanese Embassy stayed at the Willard Hotel. (Johnston, China and Japan, 368).

318. Nat. Intell., April 24, 1860.

319. Sec. Navy to Harris, 16 May 1860, M. C. Arch.

320. Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; Griffis' Townsend Harris, 322-325; On May 16, 1860 the Japanese Embassy held an interview with the Secretary of State. (Johnston, China and Japan, 370); On May 17, 1860 the Japanese Embassy called on the President. "They were conveyed in open carriages, having mounted policemen in front and rear, while the Marines and Ordnance men marched on each side of the vehicles." (Johnston, China and Japan, 371).

320½. Johnston, China and Japan, 371.

321. Nat. Intell., May 18, 1860; See also Nat. Intell., May 15, 1860; Records of the Columbia Hist. Soc., XXVIII, 98. Official reception at White House on May 17, 1860. At Willard's "the United States Marines, Ordnance Guards, and Marine Band were drawn up in the middle of Fourteenth Street * * * the procession moved forward down Fourteenth Street to the President's House. The Marine Band preceded, followed by the Ordnance men, the United States Marines forming a line on each side of the carriages * * * reception of the Embassy by the President was twelve o'clock * * * The Officers of the Army and Navy entered about eleven * * *"(Nat. Intell, May 18, 1860);"The Secretary of the Navy desires the Officers of the Navy and Marine Corps to appear in full uniform at the President's reception of the Japanese Embassy on (tomorrow) Wednesday," May 16, 1860. (Nat. Intell., May 15, 1860).

322. Nat. Intell., May 18, 1860.

323. Nat. Intell., May 18, 1860.

324. M. C. Arch.

325. M. C. Arch.; "The Ambassadors greatly enjoyed the afternoon when they went to hear the Marine Band play on the President's Grounds." (II Singleton, 61); "Take them to the Navy Yard. Take them to the Capitol, while the Senate and House of Representatives are both in session. Take them to the southern portico of the White House, that they may hear the music of the Marine Band, see the people in their holyday attire, and marvel at his 'Majesty' the President Moving among them as an equal and friend." (T.H.S. in Nat. Intell., June 4, 1860); "The Japanese Embassy was represented on Saturday evening [May 19, 1860] at the open air concert by the Marine Band, in the President's Grounds, by some eight or ten of their number. During the performance of the music they occupied the balcony of the semi-circular colonnade on the South side of the house" (Nat. Intell., May 21, 1860).

326. Nat. Intell., May 23, 1860.

327. Nat. Intell., May 24, 1860; Johnston, China and Japan, 377; "Carusi's May Ball, as conducted at Willards' Hall on Wednesday evening, [May 23, 1860] was one of the most successful ever given here. The floor was garnished with floral devices of great taste and beauty, with the Japanese and American shields painted at alternate

327. Continued.
corners. A large number of the Japanese staying at the hotel mixed with the gay and youthful dancers, and were exceedingly gratified with the scene, at the same time that they contributed not a little to the pleasure of the young Votaries of Terpsichore and their numerous parents and friends who were present." (Nat. Intell., 26 May, 1860).

328. Nat. Intell., May 26, 1860; When the Japanese were received at the Navy Yard, Washington the "Marines (were) drawn up at present arms." (Buchanan, by Lewis, p. 156); Johnston, China and Japan, 377-378.

328½. Nat. Intell., May 31, 1860, 4 .

329. Nat. Intell., June 6, 1860; Johnston, China and Japan, 378.

329¼. Nat. Intell., June 6, 1860; On June 15, 1860 the Japanese Embassy left, under a 17 gun salute, on a special train for Baltimore. They left the next morning for Philadelphia. (Johnston, China and Japan, 379-380).

329½. The Japanese Embassy arrived in Philadelphia on June 16, 1860. At Philadelphia "as the procession neared the hotel, the crowd became unmanageable; an immense police force was on duty near this point, and they were assisted in their efforts to clear a passage and preserve order by United States Marines" etc. (Johnston, China and Japan, 382); Visited New York. (id. 389); Sailed on June 30, 1860 on the Niagara (id. 389); On the 13th of February, 1860, the embassy, consisting of seventy-one persons left Yokohama in the Powhatan to the United States arriving in Washington May 14, 1860. The English copy of the Perry treaty had been burned in Yedo in 1858, and one of their objects was to obtain a fresh transcript. The writer's first sight and impression of the Japanese was obtained, when these cultivated and dignified strangers visited Philadelphia, where they received the startling news of the assassination in Yedo, March 23d of their chief Ii, by Mito rōnins. (Griffis', M. C. Perry, 417-420).

330. Nitobe, Inter. Bet. U.S. and Japan, 159-162; Denison Illus. Hist. of World, 668; Nat. Intell., Oct. 8, 1860, 3, Oct. 24, 1860, 3; An. Rep. Sec. Navy, 1860, 17; Schley, 45 Years Under the Flag, 11-18; "The Japanese Ambassadors were received on board" the Niagara at New York, June 29, 1860. She weighed anchor at 12:30 p.m. June 30, 1860. "The Japanese complain very much of want of room. I have no further space to assign them, as the

330. Continued.
Orlop Deck is filled with baggage and presents, which deprives the Coal Heavers and Firemen of their usual quarters. Five of the guns are entirely useless and the efficiency of the ship as a man-of-war is destroyed. It is due to myself to state this. We have no condensing apparatus. (the only Steamer I believe without one). I shall make as few stoppages as possible." (Captain William W. McKean [C.O. of Niagara] to Sec. Navy, 30 June 1860, Capt. Let. Bk, II, Navy Arch.); On June 29, 1860 the U.S. Steam frigate Niagara sailed from New York. Her Marine officers were 1st Lt. Israel Green and 2d Lt. Geo. Butler. Cruised to China and Japan [not via Hawaii on West trip] carried presents to Japan. Lieut-Col. Ripley of the Army and Lieut. H. A. Wise of the Navy were on board in charge of the presents. Arrived at Tokio (Yeddo) on Nov. 8, 1860. (Schley, 45 years under the Flag, 11, 18); Accident to U.S.S. Niagara (Nat. Intell., May 28, 1860).

331. Muster Rolls, M. C. Arch.; "You will proceed to New York and report yourself on the 10th Inst. to Commodore Breese as the officer to command the Guard of the U.S.S. Niagara, that is about to sail on an independent cruise, to take the Japanese Embassy home." (Col. Comdt. John Harris to 1st Lt. Israel Green, 2 May 1860, M.C.Arch.)

332. Schley, 45 Years Under the Flag, 11-21; Nat. Intell., Oct. 8, 1860.

INDEX FOR CHAPTER XVIII
Volume II.

MC CLELLAN, EDWIN NORTH.

HISTORY OF THE UNITED
STATES MARINE CORPS.